

ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY OF BENGAL
MONOGRAPH SERIES

ĀSVAGHOṢA

By

BIMALA CHURN LAW, M.A., B.L., PH.D., D.LITT.

Fellow, Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland; Royal Asiatic Society of Bengal; Royal Asiatic Society, Bombay Branch; Royal Geographical Society of London; Honorary Correspondent, Archaeological Survey of India; Corporate Member, American Oriental Society; Author, *The Life and Work of Buddhaghosa*, *Tribes in Ancient India*, *India as described in early texts of Buddhism and Jainism*, *Geography of Early Buddhism*, *Geographical Essays*, *Mountains of India*, *Rivers of India*, *Historical Gleanings*, *Mahāvīra: His Life and Teachings*, *Heaven and Hell in Buddhist Perspective*, *A study of the Mahāvastu*, *Debates Commentary*, *Designation of Human Types*, etc., etc.

4711



928.9121

Law

PUBLISHED BY

THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY OF BENGAL, 1 PARK STREET, CALCUTTA

1946

MUNSHI RAM MANOHAR LAL

SANSKRIT & HINDI BOOKSELLERS

NAI SARAK DELHI-6

Mank



Ball



PADS

OT

RS. 25*

CENTRAL LIBRARY NEW DELHI

Acc. No. 4711
Date 29-6-56
Call No. 928. 91.21 / Law

PREFACE

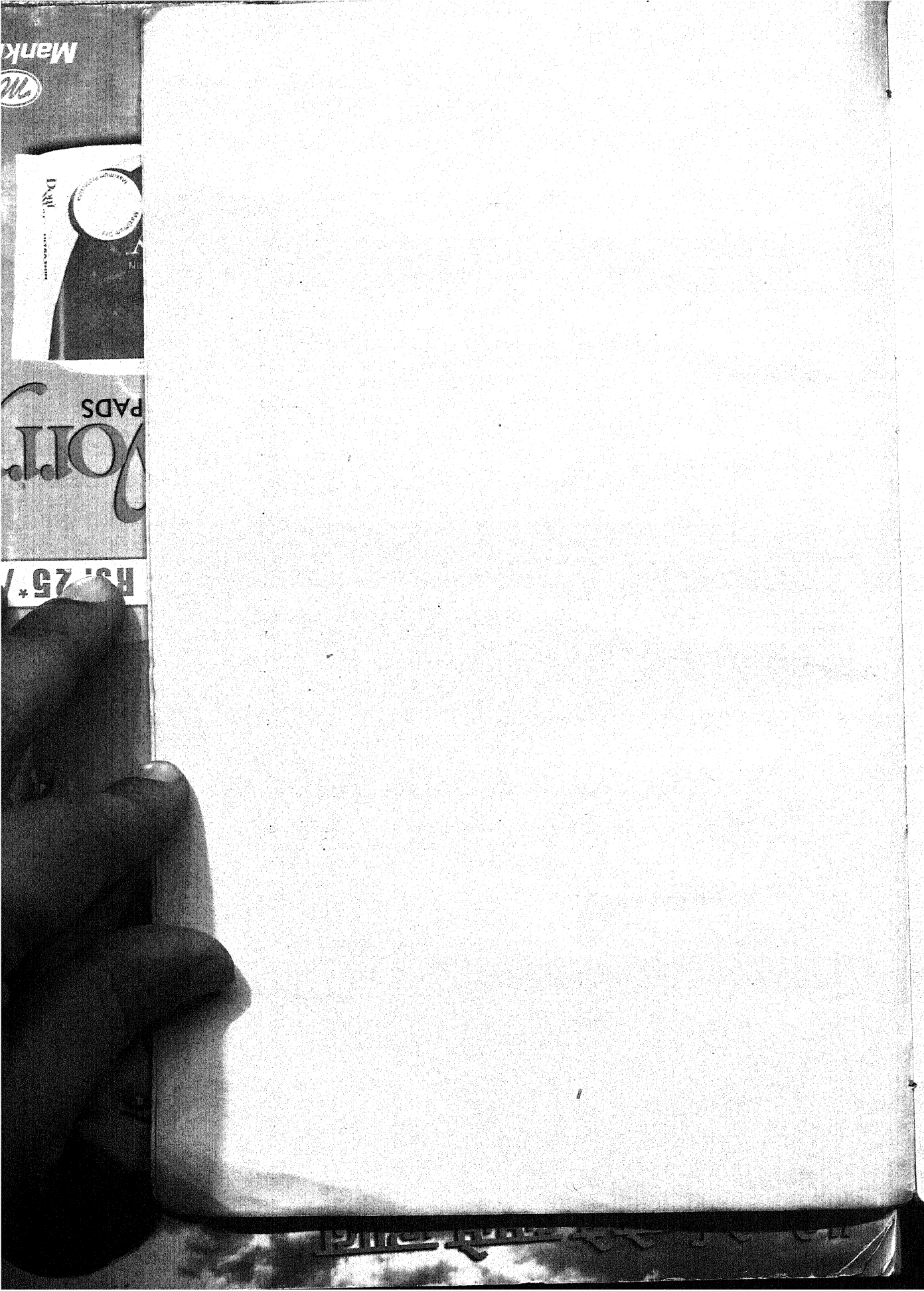
An attempt has been made in this treatise to build up a connected account of the life and labours of Āśvaghoṣa who was one of the most distinguished poets, born and brought up in the Theravāda tradition, from the available materials. It is indeed an arduous task to prepare a useful compendium of what we yet know of Āśvaghoṣa both from his own works and from other relative documents. Āśvaghoṣa was the celebrated author of two poetical works called the *Buddhacarita* and the *Saundarananda* and a drama known by the name of *Śāriputra-Prakarana*. The first chapter gives a brief survey of his writings and the researches so far made about Āśvaghoṣa and his works. The second chapter forms an estimate of him as a man. The third chapter treats of his poetical works, and makes an attempt to show his poetical genius from his own compositions. The fourth chapter is devoted to a careful comparison of his views as a teacher with those given in Theravāda Buddhist books. It also deals with the part played by him as a teacher. The fifth and the last chapter shows his masterly power of delineation of human characters and objects of nature. It must be admitted that many knotty points of Buddhist philosophy and many important terms of Buddhist doctrine received lucid treatment at his hands. Many other important points connected with the history of Āśvaghoṣa, as for example, his knowledge of Sāṃkhya and Yoga practices, have also been treated in this book. Several theories have cropped up about this great poet, which have been discussed and discarded as they rest on a more or less slender basis of evidence. I have tried to utilize fully his works as well as the other documents that furnish any information regarding him.

This treatise is, I believe, the first of its kind. It supplies some new historical data and presents some new aspects of the problems concerning Āśvaghoṣa. The importance of Āśvaghoṣa as a poet and teacher has generally been discussed from the Brahmanical point of view. But I have tried to show here that the Brahmanical side of his *kāvya*s was of secondary importance. This was brought in just to serve as the historical background of his own faith or as a means of embellishing his poetical delineations.

It is for the scholars interested in the subject to judge how far I have succeeded in presenting a readable account of the celebrated poet. I am thankful to the Royal Asiatic Society of Bengal for including it in their newly started Monograph Series.

CALCUTTA,
43 Kailas Bose Street,
September, 1945.

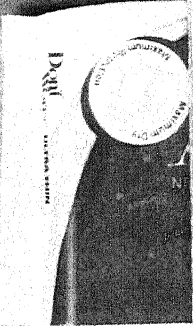
BIMALA CHURN LAW.



CONTENTS

	<i>Page</i>
Preface	iii
Bibliography	vii
CHAPTER I	
Aśvaghoṣa and his writings	1
CHAPTER II	
Aśvaghoṣa the man	12
CHAPTER III	
Aśvaghoṣa the poet	23
CHAPTER IV	
Aśvaghoṣa the teacher	55
CHAPTER V	
Aśvaghoṣa's delineations	76
Index	89

Mank



VOIT
PADS

RS



Printed on recycled paper

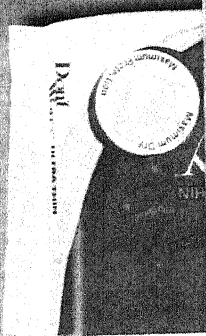
BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Abhiññānaśakuntalam
 Amarakoṣa
 Ancient Geography of India (Cunningham)
 Ancient India as described in Classical Literature (McCrindle), Constable, 1901
 Aṅguttara Nikāya (PTS)
 Apadāna
 Arthaśāstra (ed. Shamasastry)
 Asoka and his Inscriptions (B. M. Barua)
 Āśvaghoṣa, poeta del Buddhismo, 1912 (Formichi)
 Āśvaghoṣa's Discourse on the Awakening of Faith in the Mahāyāna (Suzuki)
 Atthasālinī (PTS)
- B. C. Law Volume, Part I
 Bhagavadgītā
 Bhārata Kaumudī (R. K. Mookerjee Presentation Volume)
 Bhavisattakahā (Jacobi)
 Bodhāyana's Dharmaśāstra
 Bruchstücke Buddhistischer Dramen (Luders)
 Bruchstücke der Kalpanāmaṇḍitikā des Kumāralāta (Luders)
 Buddhacarita (Dattatraya Śāstri Nigudkar & K. M. Joglekar)
 Buddhacarita (E. W. Hopkins—*Journal of the American Oriental Society*)
 Buddhacarita (English translation by E. H. Johnston, Punjab University Oriental
 Publication No. 32, 1936)
 Buddhacarita (Gopala Raghunath Nandargikar)
 Buddhacarita (Lokur)
 Buddhacarita (Madhava Sastri Bhandari)
 Buddhacarita (Pandeya Jagannath Prasad)
 Buddhacarita (translated into German by C. Cappeller & R. Smith)
 Buddhacarita (translated into Italian by C. Formichi)
 Buddhacarita (V. V. Sovani)
 Buddhacarita of Āśvaghoṣa (*Anecdota Oxoniensia*, 1893)
 Buddhacarita of Āśvaghoṣa (English translation by Cowell, *SBE*, Vol. XLIX, 1894)
 Buddhacarita Part II (Johnston; Punjab University Publication)
 Buddhacarita text (Ed. Johnston, published by the Punjab University)
 Buddhādatta's Manual (PTS)
 Buddha's Geburt und die lehre von der Seelenwanderung (Windisch)
 Buddhavaṃsa and Cariyāpiṭaka (PTS)
 Buddhist India (T. W. Rhys Davids)
 Buddhist Philosophy (Keith)
 Buddhist Records of the Western World, Vols. I and II (Beal)
 Buddhistic Studies (ed. B. C. Law)
- Catalogue of the Chinese translation of the Buddhist Tripiṭaka, A (B. Nanjio)
 Ceylon Lectures (B. M. Barua)
 Concepts of Buddhism (B. C. Law)
 Critical Notes to Saundarananda Kāvya (L. V. Poussin—*Bulletin of the School of
 Oriental Studies*, London Institution)
 Cūlavāṃsa (Geiger)
- Das Indische Drama (Sten Konow)
 Das Leben des Buddha von Āśvaghoṣa (F. Weller)
 Das Śāriputraprakaraṇa ein drama des Āśvaghoṣa (H. Luders)
 Debates Commentary (B. C. Law)
 Der Buddhismus (Wassiljew)
 Der Buddhismus und seine Geschichte in Indien (Kern), Leipzig, 1884.
 Dhammapada (PTS)
 Dhammapada-aṭṭhakathā (PTS)
 Dhammasaṅgani (PTS)
 Dictionary of Pali Proper Names, I and II (Malalasekera)
 Dīgha Nikāya (PTS)
 Dipavaṃsa (Oldenberg)
 Divyāvadāna (ed. Cowell & Neil)

- Early Buddhist Brothers and Sisters (B. C. Law, *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Bengal*)
 Early History of the Spread of Buddhism and Buddhist Schools (N. Dutt)
 Early Sāṃkhya (E. H. Johnston)
 Encyclopædia of Religion and Ethics (Hastings)
 Essays on the Languages, Literature and Religion of Nepal and Tibet (B. H. Hodgson)
- Fo-sho-hing-tsan-king (*S.B.E.*, Vol. XIX)
 Formulation of Pratītyasamutpāda by B. C. Law (*Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland*)
- Gaṇḍistotra (*Bibliotheca Indica Ed.*)
 Geography of Early Buddhism (B. C. Law)
 Great Epic of India (E. W. Hopkins)
- Harivaṃśa (Vāṅavāsī Ed.)
 Hinayāna and Mahāyāna (R. Kimura)
 History of Buddhist Thought (E. J. Thomas)
 History of Indian Literature, A, Winternitz (*Calcutta University Publication*)
 History of Pali Literature, A (B. C. Law)
 History of Pre-Buddhist Indian Philosophy, A (B. M. Barua)
 History of Sanskrit Literature (Keith)
- India as described in the early texts of Buddhism and Jainism (B. C. Law)
 Indian Antiquary
 Indian Culture
 Indian Historical Quarterly
 Indische Spruche
 Indische Streifen
 Introduction à l'histoire du Bouddhisme Indien (Burnouf)
- Jātaka (Faüsboll)
 Jātaka Nidānakathā—Jātaka (Faüsboll), Vol. I
 Jinacarita (edited and translated by Gray)
 Journal and Proceedings of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, New Series
 Journal Asiatique
 Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, 1926
 Journal of the Bombay Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society
 Journal of the Buddhist Text Society
 Journal of the Department of Letters, Calcutta University
 Journal of the Pali Text Society
 Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland
- Kathāvatthupakkaraṇa-aṭṭhakathā (*PTS*)
 Kāṭhapaniṣad
 Kaṭubhesajam (Bhāṇaka)
 Kavindravacanasaṃuccaya (ed. F. W. Thomas, *Bibliotheca Indica Series*)
 Kritische Bemerkungen zu Āśvaghoṣa's Buddhacarita, 1894 (Böhtlingk)
 Kumārasaṃbhava
- Lalitavistara (ed. Lefmann)
 Lalitavistara (ed. R. L. Mitra)
 Le Concile de Rājagṛha (Przyłuski)
 Le Museon, New Series
 Life and Work of Buddhaghosa (B. C. Law)
 Life of Hiuen Tsang, The (Beal)
 Life of the Buddha (Rockhill)
 Life of Vasubandhu
- Mahābhārata (Vāṅavāsī Ed.)
 Mahāniddeśa (*PTS*)
 Mahāvamsa (Geiger)
 Mahāvastu (Senart)
 Majjhima Nikāya (*PTS*)
 Mānavadharmasāstra (Jolly)
 Manorathapūraṇī (*PTS*)
 Manorathapūraṇī (Sinhalese Ed.)
 Māra und Buddha, 1894 (Windisch)
 Milindapañho (Trenckner)
 Minor Anthologies of the Pali Canon, The (*SBB*)

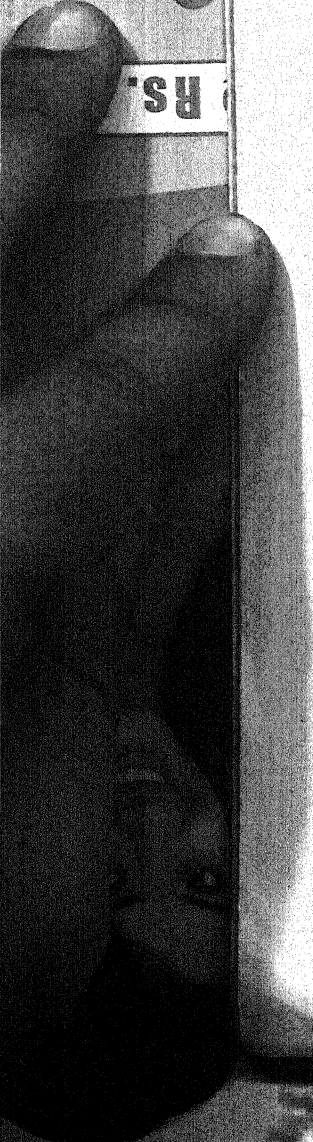
- Nachlese zu Aśvaghoṣa's Buddhacarita (Otto Schrader)
 Niddesa (PTS)
 Notes on the Saundarananda (Gawronski)
- Old Brāhmī Inscriptions in Udayagiri and Khaṇḍagiri Caves (B. M. Barua)
 Oxford History of India (V. A. Smith)
- Pali-English Dictionary by T. W. Rhys Davids and Stede (PTS)
 Pañcatantra (ed. Hertel, Harvard Oriental Series)
 Pañcatantra (ed. Kosgarten)
 Pāṇini (Goldstucker)
 Pāṇini's Mahābhāṣya
 Papañcasūdanī (PTS)
 Paramatthajotikā on the Khuddakapāṭha (PTS)
 Paramatthajotikā on the Sutta Nipāta (PTS)
 Petakopadesa (Manuscript)
 Pratijñāyugandharāyaṇa
 Pratimā-nāṭaka
 Psalms of the Brethren (PTS)
 Psalms of the Sisters (PTS)
 Psychological Simile in Aśvaghoṣa (C. W. Gurner in JASB)
- Raghuvamśa
 Rāmāyaṇa (Vaṅgavāsī Ed.)
 Romantic Legend of the Śākya Buddha (Beal)
- Saddhammopāyaṇa (PTS)
 Sammohavinodanī (PTS)
 Samyutta Nikāya (PTS)
 Sanskrit Buddhist Literature of Nepal, The (R. L. Mitra)
 Sanskrit Drama, The (Keith)
 Saundarananda Kāvya (Bengali translation by B. C. Law, 1st Ed. 1922, 2nd 1923)
 Saundarananda Kāvya (ed. Johnston, Punjab University Publication)
 Saundarananda Kāvya (Sanskrit Text ed. by MM. Haraprasād Śāstri, *Bibliotheca Indica Series*, 1910, Re-issue, 1939 by Chintaharan Chakravarti)
 Sitzungsberichte der Königl. Akademie der Wissenschaften zu Berlin
 Some Critical Notes on Aśvaghoṣa's Buddhacarita (J. S. Speyer in JRAS)
 Some Textual Notes on Aśvaghoṣa's Buddhacarita (C. W. Gurner)
 Śrāvastī in Indian Literature (B. C. Law, *Memoir of the Archaeological Survey of India*, No. 50)
 Studies about the Sanskrit Buddhist Literature (Gawronski)
 Subhāṣitamuktāvalī (Aufrecht)
 Subhāṣitāvalī
 Sumaṅgalavilāsini (PTS)
 Sūtrālaṅkāra (Huber)
 Sūtrālaṅkāra traduit en français sur la version chinoise de Kumārajīva par ed. Huber, Paris, 1908.
 Sutta Nipāta (PTS & P. V. Bapat Eds.)
- Taisho University Journal
 Thera-Therīgāthā (PTS)
 Therīgāthā Commentary (PTS)
 Travels of Fā-Hien (Legge)
 Turfan Expeditionen, Kleinere Sanskrit-Texte, Berlin, 1911
- Udāna (PTS)
 Ueber die Chinesische version von Aśvaghoṣa's Buddhacarita (Wohlgemuth)
 Ueber die Vajrasūcī (Weber)
- Vedic Index (Macdonell & Keith)
 Vinaya Piṭaka (Oldenberg)
 Visuddhimagga (PTS)
- Watters on Yuan Chwang, Vols. I & II
 Women in Buddhist Literature (B. C. Law)
 Wujrasoochi (L. Wilkinson)

Mank



VOIT
PADS

RS.



CHAPTER I

ĀSVAGHOṢA AND HIS WRITINGS

The life and work of Āsvaghoṣa, one of India's master-minds, are well worth a systematic study. The sources of this study are three-fold, viz. Sanskrit, Chinese, and Tibetan. Among the pioneers who dealt with this subject we must mention the name of Samuel Beal who published an English translation of the *Buddhacarita* from the Chinese in 1883.¹ He was followed by Cowell who published the first edition of the Sanskrit text of the same work² and also an English translation in the Sacred Books of the East Series.³ Teitaro Suzuki's critical examination of the Chinese and Tibetan traditions in the introduction to his English translation of the *Mahāyāna Śraddhotpāda-śāstra* from the Chinese⁴ and Haraprasād Śāstri's edition of the Sanskrit text of the *Saundarananda-kāvya*⁵ have given a further impetus to the study of Āsvaghoṣa. Johnston in the introduction to his English translation of the *Buddhacarita*⁶ has carefully discussed and faithfully stated Āsvaghoṣa's writings, religious views, talents and eminence. The contents of the Chinese translation of a work of which the Sanskrit title was taken to be *Sūtrālaṅkāra* were only imperfectly known. Samuel Beal's representation of select tales therefrom before the publication of an excellent translation by E. Hüber in 1908⁷ is worthy of notice. The Bengali translation of the *Saundarananda* published by me in 1922 was the first translation made of the work in any language.⁸ To F. Weller we owe the publication in 1923 of the Tibetan text of the *Buddhacarita* (Cantos I-VIII, IX-XVII) with its German translation, *Das Leben des Buddha von Āsvaghoṣa*.

Among the scholars who have contributed most to the study of the subject from different points of view since the time of Samuel Beal, the name of Böhtlingk⁹ stands foremost. He has been followed by such great French, German, British, Japanese, American, Dutch, Belgian, Italian and Russian Indologists as Sylvain Levi, Kielhorn, Speyer, Winternitz, Windisch I,¹⁰ Leumann, Lüders, Jacobi, F. W. Thomas, Keith, Gurner, Byodo, Anesaki, Kimura, Hopkins, Kern, Poussin, Windisch II,¹¹ Strauss, Schrader,¹² Hultzsch, Formichi,¹³ Gawronski, Wassiljew,¹⁴ Cappeller,

¹ The *Fo-Sho-Hing-Tsang-King*, SBE, Vol. XIX.

² The *Buddhacarita* of Āsvaghoṣa (*Anekdota Oxoniensia*, 1893).

³ Vol. XLIX, 1894.

⁴ Published in 1900 under the title Āsvaghoṣa's *Discourse on the Awakening of Faith in the Mahāyāna*.

⁵ *Bibliotheca Indica series*, Re-issue, 1939—First published in 1910.

⁶ *Punjab University Oriental publications* No. 32, 1936, pp. xiii-xcviii.

⁷ *Sūtrālaṅkāra traduit en français sur la version chinoise de Kumārajīva* par ed. Hüber, Paris, 1908; cf. Louis de la Vallée Poussin, *Le Museon*, N.S., X, 1909, 86 foll.

⁸ Published by Gurudas Chatterjee & Sons—First Ed. (1922) and Second Ed. (1923).

⁹ Author of *Kritische Bemerkungen Zu Asvaghosa's Buddhacarita* (1894).

¹⁰ Author of *Māra und Buddha* (1895).

¹¹ Author of *Buddha's Geburt und die Lehre Von der seelenwanderung* (1908).

¹² Author of *Nachlese Zu Āsvaghoṣa's Buddhacarita* (*Taisho University Journal*, 1930).

¹³ Author of *Āsvaghoṣa, poeta del Buddhismo* (1912).

¹⁴ Author of *Der Buddhismus* (St. Petersburg, 1860).

Schmidt, Wohlgemuth¹ and Balmont. Among Indian scholars who have contributed to the subject mention may be made of Joglekar, Lokur, Nandargikar, Pandeya Jagannatha Prasada, Sovani, Bhandari and Sukumar Sen.²

The latest editions and translations of Aśvaghōṣa's *Buddhacarita* and *Saundarananda* are due to Johnston whose untimely death has snatched away from our midst a sound Sanskritist of balanced mind and weighty judgment.

The Chinese Tripitaka contains translations of eight different works, all ascribed to Aśvaghōṣa and these are listed by Suzuki as follows³ :—

- (i) *Tai shêng ch'i hsin lun* : *Mahāyāna-śraddhotpāda-śāstra*, translated into English by Teitaro Suzuki under the title of '*Aśvaghōṣa's Discourse on the Awakening of Faith in the Mahāyāna*';
- (ii) *Ta sung ti hsüan wên pên lun* :⁴ A fundamental treatise on the spiritual stages for reaching final deliverance;
- (iii) *Ta chuang yen lun ching* : *Mahālaṅkārasūtra-śāstra*, better *Sūtrā-lāṅkāra-mahāśāstra*;⁵
- (iv) *Fo shü hing tsan* : *Buddhacarita-kāvya*;
- (v) *Ni kan tzü wên wu wu i ching* :⁶ A sūtra on a Nirgrantha's asking about the theory of non-ego;
- (vi) *Shi pu shan yeh tao ching* : A sūtra on the ten no-good deeds;
- (vii) *Shi shih fa wu shin sung* : Fifty verses on the rules of serving a master or teacher; and
- (viii) *Lu tao lun 'hui ching* : A sūtra on transmigration through the six states of existence.

According to Bunyiu Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese translation of the Buddhist Tripitaka, Aśvaghōṣa (lit. a horse neighing) is the author of six works :—

- (1) *Fifty verses on the rules for serving a teacher*.⁷
- (2) *Sūtrālaṅkāra-śāstra*.⁸
- (3) *Mahāyānaśraddhotpāda-śāstra*.⁹
- (4) *Mahāyānabhūmiguhyavācāmūla-śāstra*.¹⁰
- (5) *Buddhacarita-kāvya*,¹¹ and
- (6) *Daśaduṣṭakarmamārga-sūtra*.¹²

There is another work by the name of *Mahāyānaśraddhotpāda-śāstra* translated by Paramārtha. Towards the end of this śāstra Aśvaghōṣa

¹ Author of *Ueber die chinesische version von Aśvaghōṣa's Buddhacarita* (1916).

² Author of *The language of Aśvaghōṣa's Saundarananda-kāvya* (JPASB, N.S., XXVI 1920) and *On the Buddhacarita of Aśvaghōṣa* (IHQ, 1926). Vide bibliographical lists of authors and their books and articles supplied by Johnston in his edition of the *Buddhacarita*, Pt. II, pp. vii–ix and by Mr. Chintaharan Chakravartty in the re-issue (1939) of H. P. Śāstri's Ed. of the *Saundarananda-kāvya*, pp. 11–13.

³ Suzuki, *Aśvaghōṣa's Discourse on the Awakening of Faith in the Mahāyāna*, pp. 36ff.

⁴ This book has a decided tendency to mysticism explaining a gradual development of religious consciousness through fifty-one different spiritual stages, Suzuki, *op. cit.*, p. 37.

⁵ The book of Great Glory or a compilation of stories illustrating the retribution of karma, *ibid.*, p. 37.

⁶ The book foreshadows the Mādhyamika philosophy of Nāgārjuna, *ibid.*, p. 38.

⁷ No. 1080.

⁸ No. 1112.

⁹ No. 1249–50.

¹⁰ No. 1299.

¹¹ No. 1351.

¹² No. 1379—Appendix I, p. 369.

quotes a sūtra (probably the *Amitāyus sūtra* or *Sukhāvati-vyūha*) on Buddha Amitāyus or Amitābha and his Buddhakshetra Sukhāvati (p. 274).

According to Dr. F. W. Thomas,¹ the following are the works attributed to Aśvaghōṣa:

- (1) *Buddhacarita-kāvya*.
- (2) *Śāriputra-prakarana*, a play, fragment published by Prof. H. Lüders.²
- (3) *Saundarananda-kāvya* edited by Haraprasād Śāstrī.
- (4) *Gaṇḍi-stotra*.
- (5) *Vajrasūci* edited with translation by Weber.

Those attributed to him in Tibetan are the following:—

- (1) *Aṣṭavighna-kathā* (Tanjur, *Mdo*, xciv, foll. 206-10).
- (2) *Gaṇḍistotra-gāthā* (Tanjur, *Bstod* foll. 210b-214a).
- (3) *Daśakuśalakarmapathanirdeśa* (Tanjur, *Mdo*, xciv foll. 271-3).
- (4) *Paramārthabodhicitta-bhāvanākramavarṇasamgraha* (Tanjur, *Bstod*, xxxiii, foll. 145-6).
- (5) *Buddhacarita-mahākāvya* (Tanjur, *Bstod*, xciv, foll. 1-119).
- (6) *Maṇidīpamahākāruṇikadevapañcastotra* (Tanjur, *Rgyud*, lxxviii, foll. 157-8).
- (7) *Vajrayānamūlapattisamgraha* (Tanjur, *Rgyud*, xlviii, 219b-220b).
- (8) *Śatapañcaśātakanāma-stotra* (Tanjur, *Bstod*, foll. 129a-136b).
- (9) *Śokavinodana* (Tanjur, *Mdo*, xciv, foll. 270-1).
- (10) *Samvrttibodhicittabhāvanopadeśavarṇasamgraha* (Tanjur, *Mdo*, xxxiii, foll. 146-7), and
- (11) *Sthūlapatti* (Tanjur, *Rgyud*, xlviii, foll. 220b-221a).

In the Chinese Life of Aśvaghōṣa he is honoured with the epithet of Kung-tê-jih meaning Puṇyāditya (?), and with that of Kung-chang (Puṇyaśrī?) in another work called *Fo tsou t'ung tsai* or *The Record of Buddha and the Patriarchs*. The Tibetan historian Tārānātha, on the other hand, applies nine more epithets to him, viz. Kāla, Dūrdarśa, Dūrdarśakāla, Mātṛceta, Pitṛceta, Sūra, Dhārmika-Subhūti, and Maticitra.³ The confusing character of the Chinese and Tibetan traditions led Kern even to opine that 'Aśvaghōṣa was not an historical man, but a personification of Kāla, a form of Śiva'.⁴

We are here concerned with Aśvaghōṣa who is definitely known as the author of the *Buddhacarita*, the *Saundarananda-kāvya* and the *Śāriputra-prakarana*. According to *Si-yu-ki*, Aśvaghōṣa lived in a monastery and he preached so eloquently that the entire congregation was moved to tears.⁵ His wisdom embraced all subjects and he discoursed on the minute details of the three piṭakas and referred to the principle of five *vidyās*.⁶ I-tsing who came to India in A.D. 671-95 refers to Aśvaghōṣa as one of the great teachers of the past and asserts that his works were studied in his time.⁷ Tārānātha speaks of three Aśvaghōṣas and distinguishes them as 'the great one', 'the younger' and 'one who was also called Sūra'. In Beal's opinion the first of them was the Bodhisattva Aśvaghōṣa and the author of the

¹ Introduction to the *Kaṇḍavacanasaṃuccaya*, *Bibliotheca Indica Series*, No. 1309, pp. 25-27.

² Sitzungsberichte der k. preuss. Akademie d. Wissenschaften, 1911, xvii; cf. K. preuss. Turfan Expeditionen, Kleinere Sanskrit-texte, Heft i, Berlin, 1911.

³ Suzuki, *Aśvaghōṣa's Discourse on the Awakening of Faith in the Mahāyāna*, p. 21; *Geschichte des Buddhismus*, p. 90.

⁴ *Der Buddhismus und seine Geschichte in Indien*, Leipzig, 1884, Vol. ii, p. 464.

⁵ Beal, *Buddhist Records of the Western World*, I, p. 57.

⁶ *Ibid.*, II, pp. 100-101.

⁷ Keith, *History of Sanskrit Literature*, p. 55.

Buddhacarita.¹ In a commentary on Āsvaghoṣa's *Śraddhotpāda-śāstra* ascribed to Nāgārjuna, it is claimed, on the other hand, that 'there were six Āsvaghoṣas at different times, to fulfil the prophecy of Buddha', Nāgārjuna himself being a disciple of Āsvaghoṣa on whose work he wrote the commentary.² The Chinese and Tibetan traditions, taken together, refer to two Āsvaghoṣas, one the Bodhisattva Āsvaghoṣa converted to Buddhism by Āryadeva, and the other converted by Pārśva or Pārśva's disciple called Puṇyayaśa.³ These traditions connect Āsvaghoṣa with the Brahmanical tradition and suggest his contemporaneity with a Kaṇiṣka.

With regard to the date, country and other important particulars of the personal history of Āsvaghoṣa, traditions vary. According to a Sarvāstivāda tradition quoted in the Chinese work called *Li tai san pao chi* (fas. 1), Āsvaghoṣa Bodhisattva, the author of the *Mahā-sūtrālaṅkāra-śāstra* translated by Kumārajīva in A.D. 405, was 'born some three hundred years after the *Nirvāṇa*'. Hui-Yuen in his commentary on the *Mahā-prajñāpāramitā-śāstra* places the date of Āsvaghoṣa's birth about three hundred and seventy years after the *Nirvāṇa* on the authority of Kumārajīva. *The Life of Vasubandhu* mentions Āsvaghoṣa as a contemporary of Kātyāyana (evidently the author of the *Jñānaprasthāna-śāstra*) who lived in the fifth century after the *Nirvāṇa*. In the preface to the second Chinese translation of the *Śraddhotpāda-śāstra*, Āsvaghoṣa is counted among the four suns of the Buddhists and is said to have appeared in the world five hundred years after the *Nirvāṇa*. According to Huien Tsang he was a contemporary of Nāgārjuna, Āryadeva and Kumāralabdha. Huien Tsang calls these contemporaries as the four suns which illumined the world.⁴ Sang-Ying, the Chinese translator of the *Mahā-prajñāpāramitā-śāstra*, too, places the date of Āsvaghoṣa 'towards the end of the period of orthodoxy' meaning 500 years after the *Nirvāṇa*. The *Fu tsoi't'ung chi* (Vol. V) records a prophecy put into the mouth of the Tathāgata as to the transmission of the Dharma to Āsvaghoṣa six hundred years after the *Nirvāṇa*, which is adopted as if it were an unquestionable fact by Fa-tsang, a learned commentator of the *Śraddhotpāda-śāstra*. Keith says⁵ that Āsvaghoṣa knew Prajñāpāramitā doctrine. If he was really the author of the *Mahāyāna Śraddhotpāda-sūtra*, then we must assume that the doctrine of idealism developed effectively before that of vacuity (*śūnyatā*). Keith is of opinion that such an assumption seems contrary to tradition and to probability,⁶ although the doctrine was elaborated into a very complex system of thought which was distinctly influenced by the Brahmanical Absolute.⁷

As regards the author of the *Mahāyāna-śraddhotpāda*, Winternitz thinks that it cannot possibly have been written by the poet of the *Buddhacarita*. It must remain an open question whether it was attributed to the great poet or whether there was an Āsvaghoṣa II in about the fifth century who wrote this philosophical work which gives ample proof of an advanced stage of the development of Mahāyāna philosophy.⁸

¹ Beal, *Fo-sho-Hing-Tsan-king*, intro., p. xxxi.

² Suzuki, *op. cit.*, pp. 6ff.

³ *Ibid.*, pp. 2ff.

⁴ Beal, *Buddhist Records of the Western World*, II, 302ff; cf. Beal, *The Life of Huien Tsang*, p. 199—Āsvaghoṣa flourished in the east, Deva in the south, Nāgārjuna in the west, and Kumārajīva in the north. These were called four suns able to enlighten all that lived.

⁵ JRAS, 1914, p. 1092.

⁶ *Buddhist Philosophy*, p. 228.

⁷ Keith, *History of Sanskrit Literature*, 1928, p. 493.

⁸ *A History of Indian Literature*, Vol. II, Calcutta University, p. 362; R. Kimura, *Hinayāna and Mahāyāna*, 1927, pp. 41, 180 foll.

According to Beal, the date of Aśvaghōṣa is uncertain. He was the contemporary of Nāgārjuna who is generally placed 400 years after the Buddha. It will not be wrong if he is placed in the first century B.C.¹

As to Aśvaghōṣa's birthplace, the Chinese traditions in two works, the *Record of the Tripiṭaka* and the *Accounts of Buddha and the Patriarchs*, agree with Tārānātha in referring it to eastern India. The *Life of Vasubandhu* represents Aśvaghōṣa as 'a native of Bhāsita in Śrāvastī,' while Nāgārjuna in his *Mahāyānaśāstra-vyākhyā* connects him with western India. This is not all. In the *Record of Buddha and Patriarchs under successive Dynasties*, Aśvaghōṣa, the twelfth patriarch, is called a native of Benares, while in yet another Chinese work, the *Shittanzo* (fas. 1) he is made 'a man of south India'.

Another group of traditions seeks to establish the contemporaneity of one Aśvaghōṣa of great intellectual powers and an exponent of Buddhism with a king of the smaller Yüeh-chi country (i.e. Tukhāra) in north India (Uttarāpatha) who was known by the name of Chan-tan-chi-ni-cha'a. This name is usually Sanskritized as Chandana Kaṇiṣka, although Suzuki is inclined also to equate it with Chandana Kaṇiṣṭha (or Kanīṭa?). Fā-hien, the earlier Chinese pilgrim, represents Kaṇiṣka (whose name is transliterated into Chinese *Chi-ni-chia*, corresponding to Sanskrit Kaṇika) 'as if a different person from the king of Yüeh-chih who invaded Gandhāra to get the Buddha-bowl'.² With Tārānātha, too, Kaṇika and Kaṇiṣka 'are not the same king, the former being that of Tili and Mālava, while the latter that of Jālandhara'.³ According to a Tibetan tradition, Aśvaghōṣa, 'a Mahāyāna priest who held a prominent position in northern countries' was an elder contemporary of Kaṇiṣka, 'king of Palhāva and Delhi,' who flourished four hundred years after the *Nirvāṇa*. Here Jñānayaśa finds mention as a leading disciple of Aśvaghōṣa.⁴ And on the strength of the tradition in the Chinese *Tsa pao tsang ching* (*Samyuktaratnapitaka-sūtra*?) the court of king Kaṇiṣka is believed to have been adorned by three wise men, viz. a Bodhisattva called Aśvaghōṣa, a minister of State called *Mo-cha-la* (Mādhara) and an experienced physician called Caraka, who was the well-known author of the *Carakasamhitā*.⁵ In the Chinese work called *Fu-fo-tsan-ch'uan* (*Transmission of the Dharmapitaka*, fas. 5), Aśvaghōṣa is said to have been taken by king Kaṇiṣka from Pāṭaliputra to his capital, Gandhāra, in the north-west of India.

The *Life of Aśvaghōṣa* accords to the Sthavira Pārśva who resided in north India (Uttarāpatha) the credit of converting Aśvaghōṣa to the Buddhist faith, while according to the *Transmission of the Dharmapitaka*, this is due to Pārśva's disciple called Puṇyayaśa. Aśvaghōṣa who remained in central India (better, middle country), making an extensive study of the *Sūtras*, seeking a clear comprehension of the doctrine, Buddhistic as well as non-Buddhistic, was treated by the ruler of the place as a man of distinction. Hiuen Tsang represents the Sthavira Pārśva as a religious preceptor to Kaṇiṣka, king of Gandhāra, who reigned four hundred years after the *Nirvāṇa*. He is mentioned also as a great contemporary and colleague of Vasumitra under whose presidentship a Sarvāstivāda or Hīnayāna Council was held in Kāśmīra.⁶

¹ *Romantic Legend of the Sākya Buddha*, vii, f.n.

² Legge, *Fā-hien*, pp. 33ff.

³ Suzuki, *op. cit.*, pp. 2-15; p. 15 f.n.

⁴ See the article on king Kaṇiṣka in the *Journal of the Buddhist Text Society*, Vol. I,

pt. 3.

⁵ Wassiljew, *Der Buddhismus*, p. 52 note.

⁶ Watters, *On Yuan Chwang*, i, pp. 208 and 270ff.

As to the parentage of Aśvaghōṣa, too, traditions widely differ. According to one, he was born in western India as son of Loka by Ghonā,¹ while Tārānātha describes him as a son of a rich Brāhman called Saṃgha-guhya who married the youngest daughter of a merchant in Khorta. The Tibetan chronicler also adds that as a youth, when fully equipped with every branch of knowledge, Aśvaghōṣa 'went to Odiviśa, Gauḍa, Tirahuti, Kāmarūpa, and some other places (all in eastern India) defeating everywhere his Buddhist opponents by his ingenious logic'.² In the colophon of the extant text of the *Saundarananda-kāvya*, on the other hand, its author Aśvaghōṣa is respectfully described as 'the great eloquent poet, the mendicant and teacher, his reverence Aśvaghōṣa, the noble son of Suvarṇākṣi of Sāketa'.³ In the colophons of the *Buddhacarita* and *Sāriputra-prakarana*, he is described as a Sāketaka, son of Suvarṇākṣi.⁴

It is easy to make at least three Aśvaghōṣas out of these conflicting traditions: (1) Aśvaghōṣa, the author of the *Mahāśūtrālaṅkāra-śāstra*, who flourished three hundred or three hundred and seventy years after the *Nirvāṇa*; (2) Aśvaghōṣa, better Sthavira or Bhikṣu Aśvaghōṣa, a Hinayānist monk who lived four hundred years after the *Nirvāṇa*, and a disciple or disciple's disciple of the Sthavira Pārśva;⁵ and (3) Aśvaghōṣa, i.e. Bodhisattva Aśvaghōṣa, the author of the *Mahāyāna Śraddhotpāda-śāstra*, who appeared five or six hundred years after the *Nirvāṇa*. Here one must increase each of the three dates by a century in order to rectify the mistake due to the confusion made in the Indian Buddhist traditions between king Aśoka and king Kālāśoka.

The *Sūtrālaṅkāra-śāstra* ascribed to Aśvaghōṣa is found to be in its Chinese translation by Kūmārajīva (A.D. 405) a compilation of stories that illustrate the retribution of karma and relate mostly to the events which occurred in western India. There is specifically nothing in its contents to indicate that it was a Mahāyāna work. The stories related in it rather go to show that the author of the work was a man of western India. Going by the traditional date, he flourished in the first century B.C.

The Sthavira Aśvaghōṣa who is connected by tradition with the Sthavira Pārśva or his disciple Puṇyayaśa was a contemporary of Kaṇiṣka, king of Gandhāra. This Aśvaghōṣa is described as a man of the middle country and a powerful Buddhist teacher whose place of activity was this very region of India, while Pārśva is associated with the Uttarāpatha including Kāśmīra. Although the tradition does not mention his works, it is not difficult to connect him with Aśvaghōṣa, the son of Suvarṇākṣi of Sāketa, who is eulogized in the colophon of the *Saundarananda-kāvya* as 'the great eloquent poet, the mendicant and teacher, his reverence Aśvaghōṣa'. It goes without saying that the tenets of the Buddha expounded by Aśvaghōṣa in his two kāvyas, viz. the *Buddhacarita* and *Saundarananda*, are all doctrines of Hinayāna, there being not the slightest trace of Mahāyāna in them. There is neither any mention of Avalokiteśvara, the typical Mahāyāna Bodhisattva, in the writings of Aśvaghōṣa nor in the Hinayāna books. According to Nanjio's Catalogue of the Chinese Tripitaka, the *Buddhacarita* of Aśvaghōṣa was just an integral part of the Vinaya Piṭaka of the Dharmagupta sect which seceded like the Sarvāstivāda from

¹&² Suzuki, *op. cit.*, p. 18.

³ *Saundarananda-kāvya*, Johnston's edition, p. 142: *Ārya-Suvarṇākṣiputrasya Sāketakasya bhikṣor ācārya-bhadantāśvaghōṣasya mahākaver mahāvādīnaḥ kṛtiriyam.*

⁴ Johnston, *The Buddhacarita*, Pt. II, introd., p. xiii.

⁵ In the list of the Buddhist patriarchs Aśvaghōṣa figures as the twelfth, and his name is mentioned immediately after Puṇyayaśa and before Kapimāla and Nāgārjuna. Suzuki, *op. cit.*, p. 33.

the Mahīśāsakas, a typical Hīnayāna denomination. The *Milinda-Pañho*¹ preserves the tradition of a leading Buddhist therā named Assagutta (Āsvagupta) who belonged to a Hīnayāna sect having for its centres of activity the Saṅkheyya (Sāṃkhya) Pariveṇa at Sākala, the Vattaniya monastery in the Vindhya region and the Rakkhitātala in the central Himalayan region five hundred years after the *Nirvāṇa*,² that is to say, in the first century A.D. There is, perhaps, no other exponent of Buddhism than Āsvaghoṣa the poet whose writings are very much instinct with the Sāṃkhya doctrine.³ The school of thought to which Assagutta of the Kuṣāṇa age belonged may be easily represented as one, probably the Dharmagupta, the views of which are similarly influenced by Sāṃkhya. It seems that Āsvaghoṣa himself was a personality, like Assagutta, of this very school of thought. There is at least one internal evidence in one of the kāvyas of Āsvaghoṣa, namely, the allusion to the practice of Sutte,⁴ to connect him with the Kuṣāṇa age.

The Bodhisattva or Mahāyānist Āsvaghoṣa who is counted among the four suns of the Buddhists and who is said to have been placed in charge of the eastern quarter meaning eastern India flourished after 'the period of orthodoxy', that is to say, six or seven hundred years after the *Nirvāṇa*, i.e. in the second or third century A.D. He is represented as a contemporary of a Tukhāra king called *Chan-tan-chi-ni-ch'a*. The Sanskrit equivalent of this name in Chinese transliteration so far suggested is Chandana Kaṇiṣka, Chandana Kaṇika, Chandana Kaṇiṣṭha or Chandana Kaṇita. Whatever might have been the right Sanskritization of the name, it cannot certainly be mistaken for an appellation of the Kuṣāṇa king Kaṇiṣka. Both Fa-hien and Tārānātha represent king Kaṇika as a different person from Kaṇiṣka, the king of Yüeh-chih. According to the latter, Kaṇika was a king of Tili and Mālava, that is to say, of western India. The Indian name of the king might as well be Caṣṭana Kaṇika. At all events, he must be relegated to the second or third century A.D.

Whether he was the Bodhisattva, or the Sthavira Āsvaghoṣa, traditions correctly represent him as a powerful personality who was weaned from the Brahmanical tradition and persuasion. This is as true of the Āsvaghoṣas as of other great exponents of Buddhism who made their mark in the history of Indian Buddhism since the demise of the Buddha. It may be taken, then, for granted that Āsvaghoṣa, the author of the *Buddhacarita* and *Saundarananda*, was born and brought up in a Brahmin family of the middle country, or that he was a master of the Brahmanical lore before his conversion to the Buddhist faith. He is truly represented as a powerful *tīrthaka* or protagonist belonging to a different school of thought in his earlier days. After his adoption of the Buddhist faith he studied the Buddhist scriptures that were believed to have contained the genuine teachings of the Buddha. Whether as an adherent of the Dharmagupta or as that of the Sarvāstivāda sect and school of thought, he belonged to the fold of orthodoxy, and, as such, he is to be classed as a Hīnayānist or an advocate of the ideal of Arhatship. His writings bear an eloquent testi-

¹ Pp. 6 foll. and 14 foll.

² *Milinda-Pañho*, Trenckner Ed., p. 3—'parinibbānato pañcavassasate atikkante'.

³ Vide *Buddhacarita*, xii, where Āsvaghoṣa has set out the Sāṃkhya system. Here we get a formal statement of the Sāṃkhya and Yoga systems together with a refutation of them. *JRAS*, 1930, pp. 855-878; E. H. Johnston, *Early Sāṃkhya*, *JRAS Publication*, 1937, pp. 8, 9, 27, etc.

⁴ *Saundarananda-kāvya*, VIII, 42: 'praviśantyapi hi striyaścītāmanubadhnantyapi muktajivitaḥ'—women enter into the funeral pyre of their husbands and follow them even at the risk of their lives.

mony to his mastery of Sanskrit diction and to his knowledge of Sanskrit grammar, Rhetoric and Prosody, Dramaturgy, Kāmasāstra (erotic science), Rājadharmā (royal duties), Sāmkhya-Yoga and Epics and Upaniṣads. His definition of Madhyadeśa (Middle Country) differs from that met with in Buddhist literature, and it agrees exactly with the definition of Āryāvarta as given by Baudhāyana and Patañjali.¹

No importance should be unduly attached to the tradition representing Āsvaghōṣa as the composer of an excellent tune called *Lai cha hero la* (Rāgasvara ?), the classical, mournful and melodious music of which induced the citizens of Pāṭaliputra to ponder on the misery, emptiness, and non-ātman-ness of life,² the songs referred to being no better in their purport than those sung in Ceylon by the maids while fetching water in pitchers (*ghatacetiḥās*).³ The two kāvyas of Āsvaghōṣa are full of such reflections.

The identity of Āsvaghōṣa and Mātṛcētā is sought to be established on the ground that both were known in the same way as the author of one hundred and fifty ślokaś describing the six *Pāramitās* (Perfections) and eulogizing the excellent virtues of the *Tathāgata*. Keith says that the question of Āsvaghōṣa being identical with the poet Mātṛcētā is of literary rather than philosophical interest.⁴ According to a Tibetan tradition Mātṛcētā sent an epistle to king Kaṇika of the Kuśa race.⁵ I-tsing in his correspondence from the South Sea,⁶ states that both Āsvaghōṣa and Nāgārjuna 'composed some beautiful and popular hymns that were sung by Buddhists throughout India at the time of his pilgrimage'.⁷ Which Āsvaghōṣa, whether the Hinayānist poet or the Mahāyānist doctor, is meant, we cannot say. The hymns and the songs mentioned, as far as may be judged from their contents and burden, fall well within the scope of the two kāvyas of Āsvaghōṣa. The same remark holds equally true of the *Sūtra* on the doctrine of non-ego addressed to a Nirgrantha which is ascribed to Āsvaghōṣa.⁸

The discovery, even though in fragments only, of the Sanskrit originals of some of the works indiscriminately ascribed to Āsvaghōṣa in the Chinese and Tibetan traditions, has enabled scholars to ascertain the exact position. Lüders,⁹ for instance, has succeeded in identifying the fragments of a manuscript found in Central Asia with the Sanskrit original of the work known so long from its Chinese version as Āsvaghōṣa's *Sūtrālankāra*. Keith says that this work even through the medium of a Chinese translation shows much merit. It is a collection of edifying legends of the Jātaka type in

¹ *Śaundarananda*, II, 62: *Madhyadeśa iva vyakto Himavat-Pāripātrayoh*. Cf. *Baudhāyana Dharmasūtra*, ii, 10; *Mahābhāṣya* to Pāṇini, ii, 4.10.

² Suzuki, *op. cit.*, p. 35.

³ *Paramatthajotikā* on the Suttanipāta, II, p. 397— sace pi milakkha-bhāṣepariyāpannā ghatacetiḥāgītaka-pariyāpannā vāhoti, tathāpi subhāsita eva lokiyalo-kuttara-hitasukhāvahattā, sihaḷadipe maggapasse sassam rakkhantiyā sihaḷacetiḥkāya sihaḷaken'eva jāti-jarāmaranayuttam gitaṃ gāyantiya sutvā maggaṃ gacchantā satṭhi-mattā vipassakabhiḥkhū c'ettha arahattaṃ pattā The songs sung by them are translated into Pali as follows:

'Pātakaphullitakokanadam suriyālokena taj jiyate,
evam manussattagatā sattā jarābhivegena maddiyantīti.
Jarāya parimadditaṃ etaṃ milātacchavicammanissitaṃ
maraṇena bhijjati etaṃ maccussa ghasaṃ āmisaṃ
Kimiṇaṃ ālayaṃ etaṃ nānākuṇapena pūritaṃ
asucissa bhājanam etaṃ kadalikkhandaṃ idan.'

⁴ *Buddhist Philosophy*, p. 229.

⁵ *I.A.*, 1903, pp. 345ff.

⁶ *Nan hai chi kwei ch'uan*, Ch. 32, on Chanting.

⁷ Suzuki, *op. cit.*, p. 23.

⁸ *Ibid.*, p. 38.

⁹ Cf. *Bruchstücke Buddhistischer Dramen*, p. 63; Poussin, *Museon*, X (1909), 86ff.

which Āsvaghoṣa applies the sources of his poetic spirit to adorn the teachings of the faith.¹ The fragments of the Sanskrit text go to establish that its title is *Kalpanāmaṇḍitīkā*² or *Kalpanā-lamkṛitīkā* instead of *Sūtrālaṅkāra*³ and that its author is Kumāralāta instead of Āsvaghoṣa. This is borne out by the Tibetan translation of the work, and the Chinese translator of the work is not probably Kumārajīva but a later writer.⁴

The *Vajrasūci*⁵ which is 'a clever piece of polemics' against the caste-system upheld by the Brahmins is one of the works ascribed to Āsvaghoṣa.⁶ The violent diatribe against the Brahmins in this work explains and is explained by the dignified contempt for the Buddhist in *Pratijñāyangan-dharāyana* (pp. 43-46) and a calm vindication of a Brāhmaṇa's superiority in *Pañcarātra* (i, 25, 7).⁷ The Chinese translation ascribes it more correctly to Dharmakīrti. It is certain that the work itself was inspired by the *Vajrasūci* *Upaniṣad* on the one hand and the *Maitrakānyakāvadāna* in the *Divyāvadāna*⁸ on the other.

As regards the *Gaṇḍistotra*⁹ Keith points out that this work shows Āsvaghoṣa's power of music. It is an attempt to describe the religious message carried to the hearts of men by the sounds produced by beating a long strip of wood with a short club.¹⁰ F. W. Thomas says¹¹ that its Chinese name is *Kien-ch'ui-fan-tsan* edited by A. Von Stael Holstein. It is a noteworthy literary achievement. Its commentary is in Russian. It is mentioned in Nanjio's catalogue of the Chinese Tripiṭaka under 1081 where it is called *Ghanti* (*kā*?)—*Samskrta-stotra* or *Ghanti sūtra*. In the Tibetan Tanjur it is represented by a translation. It is a fine work worthy of Āsvaghoṣa and it is characterized by much metrical and literary subtlety. A number of lines consist of mere experiments in musical sound, the various *rasas* being conveyed phonetically by meaningless syllables. The *Gaṇḍi* quite different from *Ghaṇṭi* (bell) is a long, symmetrically shaped, piece of wood whence sounds are produced by beating.¹² According to Winternitz, the *Gaṇḍistotra* has tried to reconstruct in the Sanskrit original on the basis of the Chinese transliteration. It is a beautiful poem, worthy of Āsvaghoṣa, both in form and contents.¹³ But the stotra which is a collection

¹ *Buddhist Philosophy*, p. 227.

² Lüders (DLZ, 1919, p. 414)—*Bruchstücke der Kalpanāmaṇḍitīkā des Kumāralāta*, 1926; cf. *Bruchstücke Buddhistischer Dramen*, p. 63; Poussin, *Museon*, X (1909) 86ff. It is a collection of pious legends after the manner of the *Jātakas* and *Avadānas*, told in prose and verse in the style of ornate poetry. Some of the legends are well known, e.g. legends about Śibi and Dīrghāyu (M. Winternitz, *A History of Indian Literature*, II, p. 267). *Kalpanāmaṇḍitīkā* and *Kalpanālamkṛitīkā* appear as titles in the colophons.

³ Trans. Ed. Huber, Paris, 1908; Levi, *JA*, 1908, ii, 57ff.

⁴ Tomomatsu, in *JA*, 1931, ii, p. 163.

⁵ It is called Diamond needle—'Wujra Soochi' published by L. Wilkinson with the translation by B. H. Hodgson, *Transactions of the RAS*, Vol. III, 1829; A. F. Weber, *über die Vajrasūci*, *ABA*, 1859, pp. 205ff.; *Indische streifen*, I, 186ff.; cf. B. H. Hodgson, *Essays on the languages, literature and religion of Nepal and Tibet*, London, 1874, pp. 125ff.; S. Levi, *JA*, 1908, S. 10 t. XII, 70ff.; E. Burnouf, *Introduction à l'histoire du Bouddhisme Indien*, Paris, 1876, pp. 192ff.

⁶ R. L. Mitra, *The Sanskrit Buddhist Literature of Nepal*, 1882, p. 268. This work has been translated in a very spirited style into English by B. H. Hodgson in his *Essays* (pp. 126ff.).

⁷ *JRAS*, July 1921, p. 377.

⁸ (Ed. Cowell and Neil), pp. 586-609.

⁹ Ed. *Bibliotheca Buddhica*, St. Petersburg, 15, 1913.

¹⁰ *History of Sanskrit Literature*, 1928, p. 56.

¹¹ *JRAS*, 1914, pp. 752-753.

¹² For description, vide the work of Von Stael-Holstein, pp. xxi-xxii; *JRAS*, 1914, pp. 752-3.

¹³ *A History of Indian Literature*, II, p. 266.

of 29 stanzas, mostly in the *Sragdharā* metre, in praise of the Buddha and the monastery-going, shows in its 20th verse that it was written in 'Kashmir during one of the periods of misrule', and its style also bears little resemblance to that of Aśvaghōṣa.

As shown by Johnston, only one of the few verses quoted in the *Kaṇḍavacanasamuccaya* in the name of Aśvaghōṣa is to be found in the three works that were genuinely his. The authenticity of the attribution of the five verses in the *Subhāsitāvalī* is highly problematic.

The Tibetan tradition confused Aśvaghōṣa with Subhūti among many other writers. Vasubandhu in his *Abhidharma-kośa* cites a verse of the Dhārmika Subhūti which is now traced in a recently discovered Sanskrit text of the *Ṣaḍgatikārikā*, of which the Pali counterpart is named *Pañcagatidīpana*.¹ Aśvaghōṣa the poet cannot be mistaken for the author of the *Ṣaḍgatikārikā* since he speaks of five *gatis* only in his *Buddhacarita*, XIV and *Saundarananda*, XI, 62.

Sten Konow says that Aśvaghōṣa's literary efforts on behalf of Buddhism extended also to the sphere of drama. From the fragments of his work known as the *Śāriputra-prakarana*, it is evident that he was master of the technique of the art and that his drama already manifests most of the characteristics of the Indian theatre.² As a dramatist Aśvaghōṣa was a worthy predecessor of Kalidasa.³

The earliest dramas known to us by fragments are the Buddhist dramas of Aśvaghōṣa. The *Lalitavistara*⁴ does not hesitate to speak of the Buddha as possessing knowledge of the drama among his accomplishments. The Buddha is even called one who has entered to gaze on the drama of the great law.⁵ The discovery of Aśvaghōṣa's fragments shows that the drama has already attained a very definite and complete form.⁶

It must be borne in mind that Aśvaghōṣa was the exponent of the faith which had originally insisted on the use of the vernacular as opposed to Sanskrit and that it is absurd to imagine that it would have occurred to him to use Sanskrit in dramas of Buddhist inspiration and aim, had not the use of that language been established in the drama of the day. It leads us to the conclusion that the drama from the beginning was written in part at least in Sanskrit.⁷ Aśvaghōṣa has three dialects which suggest much older forms of Sauraseni, Māgadhi and Ardha-Māgadhi. The use of these dialects for characters by Aśvaghōṣa explains itself naturally from his familiarity with the Buddhist scriptures whose original was very probably in something akin to the Ardha-Māgadhi known to him.⁸ The stage reached in the Prakrits of Aśvaghōṣa shows clearly how late are the Prakrits of the orthodox classical drama and reminds us how much more closely akin to Sanskrit must have been the Prakrit of the drama of the time of Patañjali.⁹ Of the three Buddhist dramas discovered at Turfan the authorship of one of them is certain for the colophon of the last act has been preserved and it records

¹ It is an extra Canonical Pali work edited by M. Leon Feer (*JPTS*, 1884, pp. 152-161) dealing with the five *gatis* or destinies which are in store for beings according as they commit good or bad deeds in this world by body, mind, etc. For details vide B. C. Law, *A History of Pali Literature*, II, pp. 627 foll.

² *Das Indische Drama*, pp. 50 foll.

³ H. Luders, *Das Śāriputraprakaraṇa ein drama des Aśvaghōṣa* in *SBA*, 1911, 388 foll.

⁴ XII, p. 178; cf. *Divyāvadāna*, pp. 357, 360 and 361.

⁵ Keith, *The Sanskrit Drama*, p. 43.

⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 70.

⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 72.

⁸ *Ibid.*, p. 74.

⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 75; cf. Jacobi, *Bhavisattakāhā*, pp. 84 foll.

that the drama was the *Śāriputra-prakarana* of Aśvaghōṣa. Its fuller title is *Śāradvatīputraprakaraṇa* consisting of nine acts. The brief fragments of Aśvaghōṣa's drama establish the certainty of his authorship, for one verse is taken bodily from the *Buddhacarita* just as he twice refers in the *Sūtrā-lankāra* to that important work.

According to Anesaki, 'We have not enough evidence either to affirm or deny the identity of any of the Aśvaghōṣas with the author of the *Buddhacarita-kāvya*. The epithet may have been applied to many authors of different periods.'¹

Thus we have ultimately to rely upon the three works which are definitely known as Aśvaghōṣa's for all discussions concerning him as man and as poet and teacher.

¹ Hastings, *Encyclopedia of Religion and Ethics*, II, pp. 159-160.

CHAPTER II

ĀSVAGHOṢA THE MAN

Āsvaghoṣa is not known to have written an autobiography, nor is there any piece of writing which might be treated as his authentic biography. He left behind him at least three works, two kāvyas and one drama, which are definitely known to be his, and in their colophons he is described as a man of Śāketa who was the son of Suvarṇākṣi, and rightly eulogized as a great poet, teacher and monk. Suvarṇākṣi was evidently the name of his mother, presumably a gotra name. It was usual with the Brahmins and Kṣatriyas to be known by matronymics rather than their patronymics, a fact which goes only to prove the prevalence of polygamy, particularly in the two upper social grades. But how far the information supplied in the colophons of his three works regarding his birthplace and mother is authentic, none can say. If it is a genuine one, he was certainly a person who belonged to the Midland or Middle Country as defined in the *Gopatha Brāhmaṇa*, *Manusamhitā* and Buddhist literature.¹ But when Āsvaghoṣa spoke of the Middle Country as placed between the Himalayas and the Pāripātra, he made a confusion between the definition of Āryāvarta (Aryandom) by Baudhāyana² and Patañjali on the one hand and Manu's definition of the Madhyadeśa³ on the other. Its eastern and western boundaries being not given, it is difficult to say what he actually meant by the word Middle Country, whether the whole of Āryāvarta or northern India or only its middle portion watered by the Ganges system of rivers. The definition agrees only with that offered in the law book of Vāśiṣṭha.⁴

The tradition which represents Āsvaghoṣa as a person born and brought up in a Brahmin family of the Middle Country and as an erudite Brahmin scholar prior to his conversion to Buddhism may be taken for granted. We have similar traditions regarding Moggaliputta Tissa,⁵ Nāgasena,⁶

¹ It (*Madhyadeśa* or *Majjhimadesa*) extended in the east to the town of Kajaṅgala beyond which was the city of Mahāsāla; in the south-east to the river Salalavati (Sarāvati); in the south to the town of Satakannika; in the west to the Brāhmaṇa district of Thūna and in the north to the Uśiradhaja mountain (*Vinaya*, V, pp. 12-13; *Jāt.*, I, 49, 80). Kajaṅgala which is identical with *Ka-chu-wen-ki-lo* of Yuan Chwang formed the eastern boundary of the Madhyadesa (*Sumanāgalavilāsini*, II, p. 429). It lay at a distance of above 400 li east from Champā (Bhāgalpur). As Yuan Chwang's account makes Thaneswar the western-most country of the Buddhist middle country, Thūna may, according to some, be identified with Sthānvisvara (Cunningham, *Ancient Geography of India*, Intro., p. xliii, f.n. 2). Uśiradhaja may be identified with Uśiragiri, a mountain to the north of Kankhal (Hardwar).—*Indian Antiquary*, 1905, p. 179.

² In the Dharmasūtra of Baudhāyana (I, 1, 2, 9, etc.) Āryāvarta or Aryandom which is practically identical with the country later on known as Madhyadeśa is described as lying to the east of the region where the river Sarasvati disappears, to the west of the Kālakavana or Black Forest (identified with a tract somewhere near Prayāga), to the north of Pāripātra and to the south of the Himalayas (B. C. Law, *Geography of Early Buddhism*, p. 1; Cunningham, *AGI*, pp. xli and f.n. 1).

³ The *Dharmasāstra* of Manu calls the Āryāvarta of the sūtras to be the Madhyadeśa which he defines as extending from the Himalayas in the north to the Vindhya in the south and from Vinasana (the place where the river Sarasvati disappears) in the west to Prayāga in the east. (*Himavad-Vindhyayor-madhyam yat prāk Vinasanād api pratyag eva Prayāgāśca Madhyadeśaḥ* . . .)

⁴ I. 8.

⁵ President of the Third Buddhist Council—*Mahāvamsa*, V, 95ff., 131 foll; *Dīpa-vamsa*, V, 55ff., 68ff., 82, 94, 96, 100ff., 107, etc.

⁶ He was the son of a Brahmin. He was well versed in the Vedas and was later

Buddhaghosa,¹ and other later great exponents of Buddhism. It is, for instance, said of Buddhaghosa, the greatest known Pali scholiast, that as a Brahmin youth born at Bodhgaṇḍā, he acquired the knowledge of all the sciences and arts and mastered the three Vedas. He perfectly understood the meaning of the doctrine and was well versed in all the (Brahmanical) systems of thought, especially in that of Patañjali. As an able disputant, he wandered about in India to engage himself in controversies.² But Asvaghosa excelled all of them, even Buddhaghosa, in bringing his Brahmanical education to bear upon his interpretation of Buddhism.

Johnston rightly points out³ that the upper limit for Asvaghosa's date is determined by the mention of the Asoka legend in Canto 28 of the Chinese version of the *Buddhacarita*.⁴ The lower limit is similarly fixed by the date of the Chinese translation of this work by Dharmarakṣa in about 420 A.D. The Chinese traditions place the date of the Bodhisattva Asvaghosa, the author of the *Mahāyāna Śraddhotpāda-śāstra*, definitely after the period of the Orthodoxy, i.e. six hundred years after the *Nirvāṇa*. If 488-87 B.C. be accepted as the date of Buddha's *Nirvāṇa*, the beginning of the history of Mahāyāna must be placed in at least the second century A.D. The Sthavira Asvaghosa, on the other hand, is placed within the period of the Orthodoxy, and at least five hundred years after the *Nirvāṇa*. One of the traditions, as we noted, connects him with the Sthavira Pārśva who was a contemporary of Kaṇṣka and an adherent of the Sarvāstivāda sect. This tradition goes to make the Sthavira Asvaghosa a younger contemporary of Pārśva and Vasumitra, the latter being leading Thera under whose presidency the Buddhist Council of Kaṇṣka's time is said to have been convened in Kashmir.

The *Milinda* and a few of Buddhaghosa's commentaries maintain the tradition of a great Thera called Assagutta (Asvagupta)⁵ whose date is placed five hundred years after the *Nirvāṇa* and who is wrongly represented as a contemporary of the Bactrian King, Milinda-Menander. He is described in the *Milinda* as the ablest known exponent of Buddhism of the age who was a great contemporary of the Thera Āyupāla of the Saṅkheyya Pariveṇa⁶ (Sāṃkhya monastic school) in Sāgala (Śākala), situated in Uttarāpatha, as well as of the Thera Dhammarakkhita who was evidently a master of the Sutta Piṭaka and resided in the city of Pāṭaliputra.⁷ Assagutta usually lived in the Vattaniya hermitage⁸ which is located elsewhere in the Vindhya forest. He was evidently the leader of the Saṅgha at the time, for it was he who summoned an assembly at Yugandhara to discuss

converted into Buddhism. He learnt the teaching of the Buddha. (For details see *Milinda-Pañho*, pp. 6 foll.).

¹ A celebrated Buddhist Commentator of the Hīnayāna School (vide B. C. Law, *The Life and Work of Buddhaghosa*).

² *Cūḷavamsa*, edited by Geiger, Vol. I, vv. 215-217.

Bodhimāṇḍasamīpaṃhi jāto brāhmaṇa-māṇavo |
vijjā-sippa-kalāvedī tīsu vedesu pārago ||
Sammā-viññāta-samayo sabba-vāda-visārado |
vādatthi Jambudīpaṃhi āhiṇḍanto pavādino ||
Vihāraṃ ekaṃ āgamaṃ rattiṃ Pāṭāñjali-mataṃ |
parivatteti sampunṇapadaṃ suparimaṇḍalaṃ ||

³ *Buddhacarita*, Pt. II, Intro., pp. xiii foll.

⁴ *Fo-Sho-Hing-Tsan-King* (S.B.E. Vol. XIX), pp. 325f., 336.

⁵ *Milinda-Pañho*, Treckner Ed., pp. 6, 7, 14, etc.

⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 19.

⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 16—Pāṭaliputtanagare Asokārāme āyasmā Dhammarakkhito paṭi-vasati.

⁸ *Ibid.*, p. 14—ayam kho Nāgasena āyasmā Assagutto Vattaniye senāsano viharati,

the danger caused by Milinda's controversies.¹ In the commentaries he is regarded as an example of a Kalyāṇamitta, full of compassion, association with whom leads to the destruction of ill-will.² The *Milinda* refers to the Rakkhitātala which was a protected plain, in the Himalayan region, where the arahants met and discussed what they should do to solve the questions put by Milinda.³ Buddhaghosa in his *Visuddhimagga*⁴ and *Atthasālinī*,⁵ speaks of a Thera Assagutta, evidently a visitor to the Vattaniya hermitage in the Vindhya forest, by whose desire the pool water was turned into curds before the meal and became natural water again after the meal.

Aśvaghoṣa's reference to the Sutte rite⁶ gives rise to a chronological problem. So far as the classical writers are concerned, it is Strabo who, basing his account on the authority of Aristoboulos, a companion of Alexander, says that he had heard from some persons of wives burning themselves along with their deceased husbands and doing so gladly and that those women who refused to burn themselves were held in disgrace.⁷

It is clear from Strabo's account that Sutte was until then only a Taxilian usage. It is highly doubtful if the usage was prevalent even in Taxila in Alexander's time. Strabo must have recorded what he came to know of the rite as it was prevalent in his time (i.e. first century A.D.). There seems to be much truth in Vincent Smith's opinion when he says, 'Sutte probably was a Scythian rite introduced from Central Asia.'⁸

The *Mahābhārata* is full of descriptions of the different customs and usages of the peoples of Uttarāpatha. The widows preferred to betake themselves to ascetic life instead of burning themselves with their deceased husbands.⁹ The Kuru ladies are not known to have observed the Sutte rite. But in the *Mahābhārata*¹⁰ (*Strīparva*) Vidura is represented as burning on a funeral pyre, by the king's orders, all the widows who gathered together from the different parts of the country and in the *Śāntiparva* of the same Epic¹¹ the Sutte rite is praised as a practice in the case of all chaste widows.

¹ *Ibid.*, p. 6—Atha kho āyasmā Assagutto dibbāya sotadhātuyā Milindassa rañño vacanam sutvā Yugandharamatthake bhikkhusaṅghaṃ sannipātetvā bhikkhū pucchī.

² *Sumaṅgala-vilāsinī*, II, p. 779; *Manoratha-pūraṇī* (Sinhalese Ed.) I, p. 28; *Sam-mohavinodanī*, p. 272. Assaguttattherasadiṣe mettābhāvanārato kalyāṇamitto sevantassāpi vyāpādo pahiyati; Malalasekera, *Dictionary of Pālī Proper Names*, I, p. 224.

³ *Milinda*, p. 6—Tena kho pana samayena koṭisatā arahanto Himavante pabbate Rakkhitātale paṭivasanti.

⁴ *Visuddhimagga*, p. 430—Assaguttatthero Vattaniyāsenāsane bhikkhusaṅghaṃ sukkhabhattaṃ bhuñjamānaṃ disvā udakasoṇḍim divase divase pure-bhatte dadhirasam (dadhīrasam) hotūti adhiṭṭhāsi. Pure-bhatte gahitaṃ dadhirasam (dadhīrasam) hoti, pacchābhatte pākātika-udakam eva.

⁵ *Atthasālinī*, p. 419—Assaguttatthero Vattaniyāsenāsane bhikkhusaṅghaṃ sukkhabhattaṃ bhuñjamānaṃ disvā udakasoṇḍim divase divase pure-bhattaṃ dadhirasam hotūti adhiṭṭhāsi. Purebhattaṃ dadhirasam hoti pacchābhatte pākātikaṃ eva.

⁶ *Saundarananda*, VIII, 42.

⁷ Strabo, Bk. XV, Ch. i, Sec. 62; McCrindle, *Ancient India as described in Classical Literature* (Constable, 1901), p. 69.

⁸ *Oxford History of India*, p. 62.

⁹ *Mahābhārata*, XV, 148, 3—*Socyā bhavati bandhūnāṃ patihīnā tapasvinī.*

¹⁰ Chapter 26, vv. 42 and 43—*'Ye cāpyanāthāstasannānādeśasamāgatāḥ | tāmśca sarvān samānāyā rāśin kṛtvā sahasraśaḥ || citvā dārubhirvyagraiḥ prabhūtaiḥ snehapācitaiḥ | dāhayāmāsa Viduro dharmaṛājasya śāsanāt'* ||

¹¹ Chapter 148, vv. 8–10.

*Patihīnā tu kāmā nārī sati jīvitumutsahet
Evam vilāpya bahudhā karuṇā sā suduḥkhitā
Pativratā samprādiptā praviveśa hutāśanaṃ
Tataścitrāṅgadadharaṃ bharttāraṃ sāvapaśyata
Vimānasthaṃ sukrībhiḥ pūjyamānaṃ mahātmabhiḥ.'*

Āsvaghoṣa must have lived in some part of Uttarāpatha or heard about the Suttē rite which became prevalent in the country of Gandhāra. And if it became a widely prevalent usage among the women of India of his time, he must have flourished even after the Kuṣāṇa age.

Even admitting that Āsvaghoṣa was a Hīnayāna Buddhist, Johnston has pertinently raised the interesting question as to the particular Buddhist sect and school of thought to which he might have belonged and tended to maintain that he was 'either a Bahuśrutika or an adherent of the school (the Kaukūlikas?) from which the Bahuśrutikas issued'.¹ The Kaukūlikas were evidently a typical school of Buddhist pessimists, the main proposition of their doctrine being: *sabbe dhammā kukkulā*, 'All conditioned things are without qualification no better than a welter of embers'.² The Bahuśrutikas who had seceded from the Kaukūlikas (Pāli Gokulikas) were also known in the Pali Chronicles by the name of Bāhulikas.³ Combining the two names into one, one may get a name corresponding with *bahulam-assutika*, meaning 'one guided by much of non-Buddhistic doctrinal tradition,' which as an epithet is applied in the *Mahāvamsa* ⁴ to a Thera of Ceylon called Tissa who brought about a separation between the Mahāvihāra and the Abhayagiri monks. The Tibetan tradition derives the name of the Bahuśrutikas from their teacher, Bahuśrutīya, and tells us that 'in addition to the five propositions held by the Mahāsaṅghikas, they considered it as a fundamental doctrine that there is no mode of life leading to real salvation, that the truth of suffering is the Noble Truth, that to perceive the suffering of the *saṃskāras* is to enter perfect purity, that there is no way of seeing the misery of suffering and the misery of change; the Saṃgha is but subject to worldly laws and conditions, arahants acquire the doctrine of others, there is a rightly preached way and a right entry into *samāpatti*.'⁵

According to Vasumitra, the Bahuśrutikas generally followed the Sarvāstivādin doctrine, differing from it mainly on two points, while in the *Mahāvīyūtpatti* (275) they are counted among the schools which seceded from the Sarvāstivāda.

Johnston's argument for connecting the Bahuśrutikas with the Mahāsaṅghikas is rather weak. The acceptance of 'the five points of Mahādeva' was held as the common feature of all the sects and schools of thought belonging to the Mahāsaṅgha family. These points were all directed against Orthodoxy upholding the ideal of Arhatship.⁶ Now the fourth point of Mahādeva lays down that Arhats gain spiritual perception by the help of others.⁷ And if the Bahuśrutikas maintained this view and Āsvaghoṣa, too, did the same,⁸ it follows that both the Bahuśrutikas and Āsvaghoṣa belonged to the opposite camp, and not to the Mahāsaṅghikas.

¹ *The Buddhacarita*, II, Intro., p. xxxiii.

² *Kathāvatthupparakaraṇa-aṭṭhakathā*, JPTS, 1889, p. 57. 'Sabbe saṃkhārā kukkulā vītaccikaṅgāra-sammissā.'

Vide also B. C. Law, *The Debates Commentary*, PTS Tr. Series, p. 70.

³ *Kathāvatthupparakaraṇa-aṭṭhakathā*, p. 2—'Gokulikanikāyato bhijjivā aparāṇi dve ācariyakulāni jātāni Pannattivādā ca Bāhulikā ca. Bahussutikā ti pi tesam eva nāmaṃ.'

Cf. *Dīpavamsa*, V, 41: 'Gokulikanāṃ dve bhedā aparakālamhi jāyatha: Bahussutakā (variants Bahussutikā, Bāhulikā) ca paññatti dūvidhā bhijjittva bhikkhavo.'

⁴ XXXIII, 96—'Tassa sisso Bahalamassu Tissatthero'ti vissuto, Kuddho 'bhayagiriṃ gantvā vasipakkhaṃ vahaṃ taṃ.'

⁵ Rockhill, *Life of the Buddha*, pp. 183, 189; Malalasekera, *Dictionary of Pali Proper Names*, II, p. 274.

⁶ N. Dutt, *Early History of the Spread of Buddhism and Buddhist Schools*, p. 230.

⁷ La Vallee Poussin in *JRAS*, 1910, pp. 413ff.

⁸ *Saundarananda*, V, 17: *Yatnena tu pratyayaneyabuddhir vimokṣam āpnoti parāśrayeṇa*—He whose intelligence is susceptible only to external conditions obtains salvation with difficulty and only by depending on others.

There must have been something wrong somewhere. The seceders from the Kaukūlikas were the Bāhulikas, and the Bahuśrutakas (Bahu-suttakā) according to the *Dīpavaṃsa*.¹ Whatever the sect or school of thought to which Aśvaghōṣa belonged, it was closely connected with the Sarvāstivāda, and this is clearly borne out by the Chinese tradition connecting the Sthavira Aśvaghōṣa with the Sthavira Pārśva or his disciple Puṇya-yaśa. The Pali Chronicles² speak of the Kāśyapiyas as seceders from the Sarvāstivāda, and of the Sarvāstivāda and the Dharmagupta as seceders from the Mahīśāsaka sect. It is not unreasonable to think that the Dharmagupta sect was better an offshoot of the Sarvāstivāda, and it would be historically sound if the Dharmaguptas were taken as those who were also known by the name of Bahuśrutikas. The Kāśyapiyas, as their name implies, upheld the tradition of Mahākāśyapa and venerated him as their great patriarch or patron saint. 'The doubling of the epithet mahā before Kāśyapa's name proved', says Johnston,³ 'that this saint was specially revered by Aśvaghōṣa's sect, a conclusion supported by the story of his conversion in the *Buddhacarita* (Chinese version), xvi.' Johnston quotes the views of Przyluski⁴ to establish that the Mahāsaṅghikas also are known to share with Aśvaghōṣa a knowledge of the saint Sudarśana, a special veneration for Kāśyapa, and an insistence on the connection of the asterism Puṣya with the Buddha.⁵

These constitute only a presumptive evidence which is inconclusive in effect. The Sthavira Sudarśana mentioned by Aśvaghōṣa in his *Saundarananda*⁶ may not have been the Sudarśana revered by the Mahāsaṅghikas. The Tibetan tradition speaks of a Sthavira Sudarśana who was formerly Simha, king of Kashmir, and a contemporary of Kaṇiṣka and the Mahayanist priest Aśvaghōṣa of northern countries.⁷

If Aśvaghōṣa has upheld the points of the doctrine which tradition associates with this or that sect and school of thought, it may be due to the fact that he was a Bahuśrutika within the definition of Hinayāna and closely connected with the Sarvāstivāda tradition. It is truly said of the Sthavira Aśvaghōṣa of the middle country associated with the Sthavira Pārśva that he made 'an extensive study of the *Sūtras*, seeking a clear comprehension of the doctrine, Buddhistic as well as non-Buddhistic'.⁸

As for the Dharmaguptas, none of the propositions controverted in the *Kathāvatthu* is referred to them in the commentary. The Tibetan tradition would have us believe that they derived their name from their leader called Dharmagupta. They maintained, *inter alia*, that there is a reward for offerings made to the Buddha but not for those made to the Saṅgha.

The effectiveness of offerings made in the name of the Buddha is advocated in the *Milinda*⁹ containing the doctrinal views of the school of Aśvagupta. The importance of *śraddhā*, *vīrya*, and other points of the doctrine stressed in the writings of Aśvaghōṣa¹⁰ is equally emphasized in the *Milinda*.¹¹ In the *Milinda*, just as in the kāvyas of Aśvaghōṣa, we have a

¹ V, 41.

² *Mahāvamsa*, Chap. V, vv. 8-9—*Mahimsāsakabhikkhūhi bhikkhū sabbattha-vādīno Dhammaguttikabhikkhū ca jātā khalu ime dwe. Jātā sabbatthavādīhi Kassa-piṇḍā*.....

³ *The Buddhacarita*, Pt. II, Intro., pp. xxvii-xxviii.

⁴ *Le Concile de Rājagṛha*, 206.

⁵ *The Buddhacarita*, Pt. II, Intro., p. xxix.

⁶ XVI, 89.

⁷ Suzuki, *op. cit.*, p. 28.

⁸ Suzuki, *op. cit.*, p. 15.

⁹ *Milinda*, pp. 291, 294, etc.

¹⁰ B., XII, v. 111; S., XVI, 47, 93 foll.; S., IV, 29; V, 1, 5; XV, 21; XVIII, 4 (*bhakti*).

¹¹ *Milinda*, p. 36—*Saddhāya tarati ogham*.....*vīriyena dukkham acceti*.....

synthesis of the views of different Buddhist sects and schools. Both presuppose the Sāṃkhya and Yoga, the Nyāya and Vaiśeṣika systems of philosophy.¹ The true spirit of the Dharmaguptas is probably set forth by Aśvaghoṣa in the following exhortation of the Buddha addressed to Nanda:—

'Rise up, for you stand in the Law, beloved of my followers. Do not lay your head at my feet; you do not do me so much reverence by obeisance as by this acceptance of the Law.'

'To-day you have learnt that which is of good purport and full of learning and have followed the Law according to the learning.'²

It is stated at the end of the Chinese translation of the *Abhinīṣkramaṇa-sūtra*³ that the following titles of the Life of the Buddha have been adopted by different schools: the *Mahāvastu* by the Mahāsaṅghikas, the *Lalitavistara* by the Sarvāstivādins, and the *Śākyamuni-carita* by the Dharmaguptas. There is no life of the Buddha known as yet in Sanskrit bearing the title of *Śākyamuni-carita*. If by the *Śākyamuni-carita* is meant no other work than the *Buddhacarita*, then we have a definite tradition to connect Aśvaghoṣa with the Dharmaguptas.

Aśvaghoṣa was a well-read man and he was accurate in his knowledge.⁴ A careful study of the two kāvyas of Aśvaghoṣa shows that the poet was well acquainted with the Rgveda, the Epics and the Upaniṣads. Even the Divyāvadāna, a work of the Sarvāstivāda school, was not unknown to him. The ceremony of measuring out *soma* as referred to in the *Saundarananda* (I, 15; II, 36) suggests the possibility of his knowledge of the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa. His close acquaintance with the Śvetāśvatara among the Upaniṣads may be easily inferred from a number of possible parallels.⁵ Aśvaghoṣa's exposition of the Sāṃkhya system through the mouth of Arāḍa⁶ has close parallels in the Mokṣadharmas section of the *Mahābhārata*. Keith says that Buddha's meeting with Arāḍa gives ample proof of the influence of Sāṃkhya on Buddhism.⁷

Aśvaghoṣa refers to Brhaspati who begot Bharadvāja on Mamatā.⁸ There are many other references to Brhaspati in the *Buddhacarita* (I, 41; IV, 74-5; VII, 43).⁹ Brhaspati and Śukra were the first authors of works on polity. The *Saundarananda* (I, 4) and the *Buddhacarita* (II, 56; X, 18; XII, 88) mention the name of Āṅgīrasa.¹⁰ Agastya asked for Rohiṇī, wife of Soma and obtained Lopāmudrā who resembled her.¹¹ The name of this sage occurs in the Rgveda (VII. 10. 33). He was called Mānya.¹² In the *Buddhacarita* and the *Saundarananda* there is a mention of Parāśara.¹³ The Rgveda (VII. 18. 21) refers to him along with Satyayātu and Vasiṣṭha. According to the *Nirukta* (VI, 30), he was the son of Vasiṣṭha. Ambarīṣa

¹ *Milinda*, p. 3; *Sāṃkhya Yogā Nīti Viśeṣikā*.

² *Saundarananda*, XVIII, 22, 25:

Uttīṣṭha dharme sthita śiṣyajuṣṭe
kim pādayorme patito'si mūrdhnā |
abhyarcanam me na tathā prañāmo
dharme yathaiṣā pratipattireva || 22
Adyārthavatte śrutavacchrutam
tacchrutānurūpam pratipadya dharmam | 25

³ Nanjio, No. 680—A catalogue of the Chinese translation of the Buddhist Tripitaka by Bunyiu Nanjio, p. 163.

⁴ Johnston, *Buddhacarita*, Pt. II, p. xlv.

⁵ *Ibid.*, pp. xlv and xlv.

⁶ *Buddhist Philosophy*, p. 139.

⁷ Cf. *Mahābhārata*, I, 76, 3191.

⁸ *Buddhacarita*, IV, 73; cf. *Mbh.*, III, 110, 10092; III, 130, 10541; IV, 21, 655.

⁹ Rgveda, i, 165.

¹⁰ *Buddhacarita*, IV, 76; *Saundarananda*, VII, 29. Cf. *Mbh.*, I, 60, 2209.

¹¹ *Ibid.*, xii.

¹² *Buddhacarita*, IV, 74.

¹³ See *Vedic Index*, II, p. 72.

is mentioned in the *Buddhacarita* and *Saundarananda*.¹ The Rgveda mentions Ambariṣa as a Vārsagira (I, 100, 17). There were many Amba-riṣas of whom the most important was the son of Nābhāga. Prajāpati is mentioned in the *Buddhacarita* (XII, 21). It occurs several times in the *Mahābhārata* (XIII, 19, 1475; 20, 1498; 40225—*sargāt prajāpateḥ*). The name of the Kaurava king Pāṇdu occurs in the *Saundarananda* (VII, 45) and in the *Buddhacarita* (IV, 79).² He was the son of Vyāsa by Ambālikā, the widow of Vicitravīrya, husband of Kuntī and Mādri, and father of the five Pāṇdavas. Aśvaghōṣa mentions the name of the royal sage Yayāti who dallied with the Apsarā Viśvāki in the Caitraratha grove.³ In the Rgveda (I. 31. 17; X. 63. 1) he is mentioned once as an ancient sacrificer and once as a king.⁴ Vyāsa arranged the lost Vedas in many sections.⁵ He was kicked by the harlot Kāśisundarī.⁶ He was also called Dvaipāyana who classified the Vedas.⁷ He was the son of Parāśara and Satyavati.⁸ Viśvāmitra who was the son of Gādhi (Gādhiya)⁹ was captivated by the Apsarā Ghṛtāci.¹⁰ The *Buddhacarita* (IV, 19) mentions Rṣyaśṛṅga who was enticed by Śāntā.¹¹ He was the son of Vibhāṇḍaka according to the *Rāmāyaṇa* (III, 110, 9991). Dīrghatapas Gautama is mentioned in the *Buddhacarita* (IV, 18). He was captivated by a low caste young woman.¹² Dīrghatapas later came to be called Dīrghatamas.¹³ Aja is mentioned in the *Buddhacarita* (VIII, 79).¹⁴ Aśvaghōṣa refers to Manu, son of Vaivasvata.¹⁵ Tālajaṅgha fell in love with Menakā.¹⁶ Aśvaghōṣa mentions Aurva,¹⁷ Prthu,¹⁸ and Māndhātṛ.¹⁹ The *Saundarananda* mentions Sagara,²⁰ Bhārgava,²¹ Vālmiki²² and Kāṇva.²³ Sagara twice referred to by Aśvaghōṣa (B., I, 49; S., I, 25) occurs also in the Bālakāṇḍa of the *Rāmāyaṇa*. It is mentioned in the *Saundarananda* (I, 15; II, 36) that king Suddhodana caused his priest to measure out the Soma at the proper time and with due ceremony. Aśvaghōṣa refers to Yoga in his *Saundarananda* (V, 32).²⁴ King Śāntanu, son of Pratīpa, lost all self-control when Gaṅgā left him.²⁵ Aśvaghōṣa refers to the fall of Indra.²⁶ Janaka was able to instruct the

¹ *Buddhacarita*, IX, 69; *Saundarananda*, VII, 51.

² *Mahābhārata*, I, 115, 4487; I, 95, 110, 117-8; I, 40, 1665; I, 60, 2213, etc.

³ *Buddhacarita*, IV, 78; *Saundarananda*, II, 53; XI, 50; cf. *Mahābhārata*, I, 75, 3158, sec. 144.

⁴ Cf. *Mahābhārata*, I, 75, 3164, 3171-2.

⁵ *Buddhacarita*, I, 42; cf. *Mbh.*, I (anukram).

⁶ *Buddhacarita*, IV, 16; cf. *Saundarananda*, VII, 30.

⁷ S., VII, 29.

⁸ *Mbh.*, I, 17, 20, 25, 55, 56, 59-60, 75-6, 79, etc.

⁹ *Buddhacarita*, IV, 20; *Saundarananda*, VII, 35.

¹⁰ *Mbh.*, I, 71, 2914, 2917, 2918; I, 74, 3056; I, 175, 652, etc.; cf. *Rāmāyaṇa*, IV, 35, 7; I, 65.

¹¹ Cf. *Saundarananda*, VII, 34; *Rāmāyaṇa*, I, 9, 3; cf. *Mbh.*, I, 2, 443; II, 440; III, 110, 9994; cf. also Nalinikā Jātaka, *Jāt.*, V, pp. 193ff.

¹² Cf. *Mbh.*, 170, *Bhīṣmasatyavati saṃvāda*; *Mbh.*, I, 104, 4192, 4198.

¹³ Cf. *Saundarananda*, I, 4.

¹⁴ Cf. *Mbh.*, XIII, 5668, 7684.

¹⁵ B., VIII, 78; cf. *Harivamśa*, 433, 633; *Mbh.*, I, 75, 3126, 3137, 3138, etc.

¹⁶ S., VII, 39; *Mbh.*, I, 75, 2915, 2916, 2918; I, 8, 943-4, 945, etc.

¹⁷ B., I, 10; *Mbh.*, III, 315, 17465.

¹⁸ *Buddhacarita*, I, 10; cf. *Mbh.*, XII, 29, 1030-32.

¹⁹ *Buddhacarita*, I, 10; cf. *Mbh.*, VI, 17, 645—Māndhātṛ is stated to have been taken out by the Aśvins from his father's womb by a surgical operation.

²⁰ *Saundarananda*, I, 25; *Mbh.*, XII, 29, 1023.

²¹ *Saundarananda*, I, 25; cf. *Mbh.*, XI, 661; XII, 60.

²² *Saundarananda*, I, 26.

²³ *Ibid.*, I, 26; cf. *Mbh.*, I, 68-70.

²⁴ *Mbh.*, I, 916; I, 1218.

²⁵ *Saundarananda*, VII, 41; *Mbh.*, I, 95, 3797; I, 99, 3920, 3923, 3965-7.

²⁶ *Saundarananda*, XI, 48; cf. *Mbh.*, XII, 8142.

twice-born in the methods of Yoga.¹ In the *Buddhacarita* (II, 3),² Padma is mentioned as the lord of elephants. Siddhārtha took his delight with the Śākya king's daughter-in-law as the thousand-eyed Indra with Śacī.³ The Śuddhāvāsa gods placed an old man in front of the prince to incite him to leave his home.⁴ God Purāṇḍara fell in love with Ahalyā, the wife of Gautama.⁵ Sanatkumāra in the third heaven approached Maghavat.⁶ The horse Kanthaka is like that of Tārksya in speed.⁷ Ugrāyudha met his death at the hands of Bhīṣma.⁸ There is a reference to Vṛddha Parāśara in the *Buddhacarita* (XII, 66).⁹

As an inhabitant of Sāketa, Āsvaghoṣa was well acquainted with the *Rāmāyaṇa*. In the *Buddhacarita* (I, 43) he refers to Vālmīki as the ādikavi and in the *Saundarananda*¹⁰ he extols him as dhīmān (wise). The narrative of Rāma's journey to the forest and the subsequent return of Lakṣmaṇa to the desolate city bears a striking resemblance to the description given in the *Buddhacarita* of the departure of Siddhārtha and the subsequent return of the charioteer Chandaka to Kapilavastu. In canto VIII of the *Buddhacarita* there are four references from which may be inferred his familiarity with the Ayodhyākāṇḍa of the *Rāmāyaṇa*. Similarity in words between the two is conclusive on this point.¹¹

The parallelism existing between Āsvaghoṣa and the epic literature on the one hand and Āsvaghoṣa and Kālidāsa on the other may be regarded as marking a period of transition in the development of classical Sanskrit literature. The trend of both the *Buddhacarita* and the *Saundarananda* with their motif of renunciation naturally brings them more closely into contact with the *Rāmāyaṇa*. Gawronski¹² draws our attention to some references in the *Rāmāyaṇa*. One of these, according to Gurner,¹³ is probably taken from the Daśaratha Jātaka and not from the *Rāmāyaṇa*. Two references to Vālmīki are, of course, significant in this connection. Gurner argues, however, that the words *Vālmīkirādaḥ ca sasarja padyaṃ*¹⁴ may or may not be a direct allusion to the well-known incident in the *Rāmāyaṇa*—*māniṣāda*, etc.¹⁵ In Cowell's text of the *Buddhacarita* there is a more conclusive evidence in the matter in the word, *Vālmīkinādaś ca*. The allusion to Vālmīki as the tutor of the two sons, in *Saundarananda* (I, 26), points unmistakably to the Uttarākāṇḍa. Similarly, it may be shown that Āsvaghoṣa directly refers to incidents in the *Mahābhārata*.¹⁶ In both the kāvyas of Āsvaghoṣa, the legend of Mādri and Pāṇḍu shows the consequence of addiction to women (*B.*, IV, 79; *S.*, VII, 45). As pointed out by Gawronski, the allusion in Āsvaghoṣa's works to Gautama Dirghatapas

¹ *Buddhacarita*, I, 45; *Mbh.*, XII, 327, 12282.

² *Rāmāyaṇa*, I, 42, 16; *Mbh.*, VI, 2866.

³ *Buddhacarita*, II, 27; *Rāmāyaṇa*, VI, 35, 1; *Mbh.*, III, 113, 10092.

⁴ *Buddhacarita*, III, 26; cf. *Divyāvadāna*, 408.

⁵ *Buddhacarita*, IV, 72; *Saundarananda*, VII, 25; cf. *Mbh.*, V, 12, 373; XII, 343, 13205.

⁶ *Buddhacarita*, V, 27; cf. *Chāndogya Upaniṣad*, VII, 26, 2.

⁷ *Buddhacarita*, VI, 5; cf. *Mbh.*, VIII, 687; *Divyāvadāna*, 444.

⁸ *Buddhacarita*, XI, 18; *Mbh.*, IX, 2, 93; *Harivaṃśa*, 1082.

⁹ Cf. *Mbh.*, XII, 8431 foll.

¹⁰ *Saundarananda*, I, 26.

¹¹ Vide *JPASB*, N.S., Vol. XXIII (1927), pp. 347 foll.

¹² *Studies about the Sanskrit Buddhist Literature*, 1919, pp. 27-39 and *Notes on the Saundarananda*, 1922.

¹³ *JPASB*, N.S., Vol. XXIII (1927), pp. 347ff.; cf. *Buddhacarita*, IX, 59, with *Rāmāyaṇa*, VI, cxxviii, 3.

¹⁴ *Buddhacarita*, I, 48.

¹⁵ *Rāmāyaṇa*, II, XV.

¹⁶ *Buddhacarita*, XI, 31 and *Saundarananda*, IX, 17.

also shows the influence of the Sabhāparvan of the *Mahābhārata* (Chap. XXI). The description of the city of Rājagṛha, as given in the *Buddhacarita* (B., X), bears ample testimony to the fact that it is based on a similar description given in the Sabhāparvan of the *Mahābhārata*. The works of Aśvaghōṣa mark a definite stage in the development of kāvya literature from a more or less narrative poem to a series of set pieces on conventional topics. This tendency appears also in the *Rāmāyaṇa*. Thus barring a few passages of purely Buddhist doctrine, the whole range of topics used by Aśvaghōṣa, whether in the main body of his narrative or incidentally, is found alike in the *Rāmāyaṇa*. These topics consist of descriptive passages of purely literary value and fragments of thought from the prevailing body of ideas as expressed in the different schools of philosophy, political and military science, ethics and psychology, grammatical and aesthetic theory, etc. The duties of a king, the technique of an army, the duty of telling unpleasant truths, the moral conflict over the renunciation of vows, the pain of separation and consolation in the transitoriness of the world, are common in the *Rāmāyaṇa* and Aśvaghōṣa. Thus the ideal reigns of Daśaratha and Rāma, with the combination of climatic blessings, material prosperity and general goodwill of the people, are also reflected in the conditions of Kapilavastu during the reign of Śuddhodana and after the return of the Buddha (cf. R., I, VI; R., VI, cxviii, 18ff; B., II, 1-16; S., III, 30-41). The allusion to Manu in *Rāmāyaṇa* (I, VI, 4) is also found. The description of the city as given in *Saundarananda* (I, 42-55) is evidently based on the model of *Rāmāyaṇa* (I, V). The hermitages as described in the *Buddhacarita* (VII, 32) and the *Saundarananda* (I, 5-17) are similar in description to those in the *Rāmāyaṇa* (III, 1, 1-9; III, XI, 47-52). The types of asceticism as given in the *Buddhacarita* (VII, 14-18) seem to be an elaboration of the list of technical terms for ascetics as given in the *Rāmāyaṇa* (III, VI, 2-5; XII, XCII, 91-93; V, XIII, 38ff.). The nature and tone of Yaśodharā's lament (B., VIII) or Sundarī's lament over desertion by her husband (S., VI, 13-24) are echoed in Tārā's laments (R., IV, XX and XXIII) and Sitā's mourning (R., V, XXV-XXVI and XXVIII). The picture of Sundarī, tearing and throwing her ornaments ('Na bhūṣaṇārtho mama sampratīti sā dikṣu cikṣepa vibhūṣaṇāni'—*Saundarananda*, VI, 28) is the same as that of Kaikeyī (*Ram.*, II, IX, 59). The beautiful description of the contrast in human fortune, which we find in many passages of Kālidāsa, is reflected in the writings of Aśvaghōṣa. The animal-faced demons of Māra, armed with trees and stones, remind us of the hosts of Rāvaṇa and the weapons of the apes. The juxtaposition of animals in the expression—'Yaścaiva nānāvidhaghorarūpaiḥ vyāghroṣṭranāgendramrgāśvavaktraiḥ' (R., VI, lix, 23) is similar to what we find in the *Buddhacarita* (XIII, 19). The shout of an army and such other noises are described by both.¹ The descriptions of mountains and heavenly gardens to which the Buddha leads Nanda² recall similar passages in the *Rāmāyaṇa*.³ The interpretation of nature in terms of human passions, a characteristic feature of classical Sanskrit literature from Kālidāsa to Jayadeva, has its prototype in the *Rāmāyaṇa*.⁴ The same method is also followed by Aśvaghōṣa when he describes the restlessness of Nanda on his following the Buddha for the first time.⁵ Cowell points out that there is a striking resemblance in the description of women

¹ *Rāmāyaṇa*, VI, xlii, 38, etc., and *Buddhacarita*, XIII, 52ff.

² *Saundarananda*, X, 4-14 and 18-31.

³ V, lvi, 26-50; VII, lxii, 1-16.

⁴ E.g. the description of the seasons in *Rāmāyaṇa*, IV, xxviii and *Rāmāyaṇa*, IV, xxx.

⁵ *Saundarananda*, III, 5.

asleep in the palace of Śuddhodana and those in the harem of Rāvaṇa.¹ The festival of Indra's banner may be traced from the *Rāmāyaṇa* through Āsvaghōṣa to Kālidāsa.² The sense of dejection at the end of the festival and the general elation when the banner is raised are found in the *Rāmāyaṇa* as also in Āsvaghōṣa. The father of Siddhārtha collapses on hearing his son's departure like Daśaratha under similar circumstances.³

The didactic passages and allusions which are so numerous in the works of Āsvaghōṣa are also to some extent derived from the *Rāmāyaṇa*. The *Rāmāyaṇa* in passages of fervent appeal rather than of didactic insistence, pauses to dwell on examples from familiar names, such as those of saints who went to heaven,⁴ or of faithful wives.⁵ The name of Nahuṣa is mentioned to illustrate not the attainment of heaven but the transitoriness of heavenly state.⁶ Such topics as the breaking of ascetic vows,⁷ the fulfilment of *dharma* by royalty⁸ and methods of attaining mokṣa⁹ or salvation, etc., have not escaped the attention of Āsvaghōṣa.

Āsvaghōṣa employs the term *rājaśāstra* for the science of politics and treats as standard authorities the works of Uśanas or Śukra, and Bṛhaspati. The principles of this science upheld by the poet appear to have been based on the *rājadharmā* section of the Great Epic. The *Buddhacarita*¹⁰ refers to Udāyin as an authority on *nīti* or the science of worldly conduct and in the *Saundarananda*¹¹ occurs the word *daṇḍanīti*.

Āsvaghōṣa in his *Buddhacarita* (II, 4) mentions horses adorned with various auspicious marks.

Rṣi Ātreya incidentally finds mention as the first propounder of the science of healing.¹² But from this fact it cannot be inferred that Āsvaghōṣa kept in view Caraka, the legendary court physician of Kaṇṣka.

The picture of the pleasures of love drawn by Āsvaghōṣa is marked by that wealth of intimate detail which appeals to all Indian poets. But still more sincere is Āsvaghōṣa's burning enthusiasm for his own ideal. In the *Saundarananda* Nanda's rejection of Sundarī may seem to us heartless; the transference of his fickle affection to the *apsarās* has its comic side but in the end he seeks the welfare of others even as does the Buddha. Rāma on the contrary in his rejection of Sītā after the long agony of separation has no warmer motive than obedience to the doctrine that Cæsar's wife must be above suspicion.¹³

Āsvaghōṣa seems to be acquainted with Kāmaśāstra. He refers to the methods of Yoga in his *Buddhacarita*.¹⁴ The Uttaramīmāṃsā (Vedānta system) and Vaiśeṣika systems were entirely unknown to him. Although there is no specific reference to the Pūrvamīmāṃsā-sūtras, the term *vidhi* is used in the technical sense of this school. There is every reason to believe that Āsvaghōṣa had knowledge at least of the first section of the Nyāyasūtras now extant.

The reference to *kāvya-dharma* in the *Saundarananda* shows Āsvaghōṣa's acquaintance with poetics.

¹ Cf. *Buddhacarita*, V, 47-63 and *Rāmāyaṇa*, V, x, 30-49; V, ix, 33-36 and V xi, 29-36.

² Cf. *Rāmāyaṇa*, II, lxxiv, 36; IV, xvi, 37 and 39; IV, xvii, 2, etc., and *Buddhacarita*, I, 63; III, 12; VIII, 73; *Saundarananda*, III, 25; IV, 46.

³ *Buddhacarita*, VIII, 73; *Rāmāyaṇa*, II, lxxiv, 35.

⁴ *Rāmāyaṇa*, II, lxiv, 42.

⁵ *Ibid.*, II, cxviii, 10-12, etc.

⁶ *Saundarananda*, XI, 42-51 and *Buddhacarita*, XI, 13-18.

⁷ *Buddhacarita*, X, 58 and *Saundarananda*, VII, 51.

⁸ *Buddhacarita*, IX, 20.

⁹ *Ibid.*, XII, 67.

¹⁰ IV, 64.

¹¹ II, 28.

¹² *Buddhacarita*, I, 43.

¹³ Keith, *History of Sanskrit Literature*, 1928, p. 61.

¹⁴ *Buddhacarita*, I, 45; II, 45 and XII, 105; vide *JRAS*, 1914, pp. 747 foll.

In the *Saundarananda* ¹ there is a reference to *śūṇyavāda* and the words *śūṇya* and *śūṇyatā* occur in verses 20 and 17. The theory of *śūṇyatā* was evolved in the minds of the teachers who lived long before Nāgārjuna.² Aśvaghōṣa's employment of the terms of the theatre and the dramatic forms of address bear testimony to his knowledge of the principles of dramatic technique.

The various kinds of metre employed by him lead us to think that prosody was fully developed in his time. He did not strictly follow the rules of Pāṇini.

¹ Canto XII, 16-22.

² *JRAS*, 1914, pp. 747-748. Cf. Baston, *JA*, 1912, i, 79 foll.; Hultsch, *ZDMG*, lxxii, 111 foll.; lxxiii, 229 foll.

CHAPTER III

AŚVAGHOṢA THE POET

The kāvya poetry as exemplified by Aśvaghōṣa's *Buddhacarita* and *Saundarananda* and Kālidāsa's *Kumārasambhava* and *Raghuvamśa* represents a stage in the development of literary art in India which is beyond the earlier stage of poetry of which the two best examples are the *Mahābhārata* and the *Rāmāyaṇa*. The same remark holds true, *mutatis mutandis*, of Aśvaghōṣa's *Śāriputraprakaraṇa*, Bhāsa's *Pratimānāṭaka* and *Pratijñā-Yaugandharāyaṇa* and Kālidāsa's *Abhijñāna-Śakuntalam* taking us as they do beyond anything produced in earlier times in the form of dramas.

Aśvaghōṣa was earlier than Kālidāsa and Bhāsa. Keith says that Aśvaghōṣa's *Buddhacarita* is probably the source of a verse in Bhāsa's *Pratijñā-Yaugandharāyaṇa* and its prākṛit is unquestionably older in character.¹ It cannot be accepted that Bhāsa stands nearer Aśvaghōṣa in technique than Kālidāsa.² Aśvaghōṣa influenced Kālidāsa's style but the chief cause of its perfection must have been natural taste and constant re-working of what he had written.³ A comparison of the Nāṭyaśāstra with the works of Aśvaghōṣa will show that the Prakrits recognized by the Nāṭyaśāstra are later than those of Aśvaghōṣa.⁴

There were *kavis* in earlier times, many in number, whose personal history is either completely forgotten or imperfectly known. But who were these *kavis* of the earlier ages? The gifted Vedic seers through whose mouth the inspired hymns in the Rgveda found their animated utterances were revered as *kavis* and *ṛṣis*, and not inappropriately as *sadvipras*. The Brāhmaṇas of later ages traced the origin of their gotra names to these best of men in whom the poet was inseparably combined with the philosopher, the seer with the teacher and priest. There is then nothing to be surprised at when in the oldest known Sanskrit lexicon of Amarasimha the *kavi* or poet is defined by a set of synonyms as a person who is learned, wise, able to judge what is right and wrong, possessed of good understanding, clever in sciences and arts, intelligent, steady in character, talented, endowed with knowledge, prudent man of judgment, deeply versed, sensible, the foremost among men, accomplished, distinguished for culture, an adept, foresighted and far-sighted.⁵ Even Aśvaghōṣa himself, while speaking of Vālmiki, pays to him the compliment of being the *ādikavi* (pioneer among poets) and *dhī-mān* (sensible). The epithet of *kavi* is applied to both Brhaspati and Śukra, the former of whom is eulogized as *vācaspati* (master of speech) and *surācārya* (teacher of the gods), and the latter as *kāvya* (son of a poet, *kavi-putraḥ*) and *kavi* (one who imparts instruction, *kuyate i*).⁶ The adjective, *ādi*, is applied where the person is found to be an originator, pioneer or fore-runner (*pubbaṅgamo*) of anything, the maker of a school of thought; e.g. the epithets of *ādigare* (*ādikaro*) and *tiṭthagare* (*tiṭhakaro*) as applied to

¹ *Sanskrit Drama*, pp. 93-94.

² *Ibid.*, p. 95.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 161.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 292.

⁵ *Amarakoṣa*, Brahmanavarga, 10:

*vidvān vipāścid doṣajñāḥ san sudhīḥ kauwido budhāḥ |
dhīro manīṣī jñāḥ prājñāḥ samkhyātvān paṇḍita kaviḥ ||
dhīmān surī kṛtī kṛṣṭilabdha-varṇo vicakṣanaḥ
dūradarśī dīrghadarśī.....'*

⁶ *Amarakoṣa*, Svargavarga, 127, 128.

Mahāvīra, the founder of a system of thought; the epithet of *ādividvān* as applied to *ṛṣi* Kapila, and the originator of a new style or school of poetry; the epithet of *ādikavi* as applied to Vālmīki.

Going by all these accepted ideas, a person is not entitled to the epithet of *kavi* or poet if he is not at the same time a seer and a creator (*draṣṭā*, *sraṣṭā*), a propounder and an instructor, the seer of truth, good and beauty, the creator of a literary art of conveying truth, good and beauty. This two-fold function of a poet is stated by Aśvaghoṣa himself through the following admonition of the Buddha to Nanda:

Thottamebhyo 'pi mataḥ sa tūttamo
ya uttamaṃ dharmamavāpya naiṣṭhikaṃ |
acintayitvātmagataṃ paśīramaṃ
śamaṃ parebhyo 'pyupadeṣṭumicchati ||
Vihāya tasmādiha kāryamātmanaḥ
kuru sthīrātman parakāryamapyatho |
bhramatsu sattveṣu tamovṛtātmasu
śrutapradīpo nīśi dhāryatāmayaṃ || ¹

'Here he is considered the best of men who, after obtaining the best and final state of things, desires, unmindful of the personal trouble, to instruct others about tranquillity. Leaving aside, therefore, thy own work, go on doing, thou of steady character, the work for others and hold up this torch of tradition in the darkness of night to the beings who are wandering, being themselves enveloped by darkness.'

Aśvaghoṣa expressly states at the conclusion of his *Saundarananda* that he had not composed the poem for the sake of poetry. Here the form of poetry is subordinated to the nobler purpose of conveying the ultimate truth about salvation and tranquillity. 'This poem, dealing thus with the subject of salvation,' says he, 'has been written in the *kāvya* style, not to give pleasure, but to further the attainment of tranquillity and with the intention of capturing hearers devoted to other things. For that I have handled other subjects of *kāvya* poetry to make it palatable, as sweet is put into a bitter medicine to make it drinkable.'

Yan mokṣāt kṛtamanyādatra hi mayā tat kāvyadharmāt
kṛtaṃ |
pātum tiktamivaṣadhaṃ madhuyutaṃ ² hridyaṃ kathaṃ
syādi || —XVIII, 63.

The function assigned by Aśvaghoṣa to the *kāvya* poetry goes to make it only a handmaid of religion and philosophic thought. If religion and philosophy are concerned with the subject of *śreya* or *nīḥśreyas* (*ne pas ultra*) the function of poetry consists in rendering it *preya* or palatable in its form. Evidently this view of the function of poetry was promulgated in the *kāvya-dharma* or work on poetics with which Aśvaghoṣa was acquainted.

There were poets and poetry in the Buddha's time. The Buddha speaks of the four classes of poets, viz. *cintākavi* or the poet of imagination, *sutakavi* or the poet of tradition, *atthakavi* or the poet of *set purpose*, and *paṭibhāṇa-kavi* or the improvisatore. ³ The Thera Vāṅgisa (Vāgīsa, same as Vācaspati), who excelled other brothers in the art of extemporizing, describes his previous career as being that of a person who wandered about in the

¹ *Saundarananda*, XVIII, 56, 57.

² Cf. Bhāṇaka's *Kaṭubheṣajam*.

³ *Anguttara*, II, p. 230. Cattāro ime bhikkhave kavi. katame cattāro? *cintākavi*, *sutakavi*, *atthakavi*, *paṭibhāṇakavi*.

country 'drunk with poesy' (*Kāveyyamatto*).¹ There was a grave reason for the Bhikṣu Āsvaghoṣa in describing himself as an *arthakavi*²: *mokṣārthagarbhā kṛtiḥ*.³ The attaching of undue importance by the mendicants to the poems skilfully composed by outsiders was apprehended by the Buddha as one of the probable causes of future danger to the Good Faith, and the Discourses in which he dwelt on this subject were included by Asoka in the list of the seven texts recommended for constant study and remembrance by all sections of the Buddhist community.

It does not follow from the Buddha's statement that he condemned the art or form of poetry. All that he did was to warn his disciples and followers against being carried away by the emotional appeal of any and every kind of poetry, against sacrificing truth to sentiment. I should better quote the words of the Buddha to indicate what was precisely in the Buddhist traditional background of Āsvaghoṣa's mind and thought.

'There may be, O Brethren, in times to come mendicants of undeveloped body, undeveloped sense (virtue), undeveloped mind, and undeveloped wisdom . . . When those discourses which are delivered by the Tathāgata, which are deep and profound in their meaning, which deal with things extraordinary and which are concerned with matters relating to voidness, are recited, they will not pay attention to them, nor will they give ear nor will they produce a heart to know, nor will they deem them worth learning by heart and studying; when on the other hand, those texts which are composed by the poets, which are in the form of poems (*Kavikatā Kāveyyā*) sweetly worded and sweetly phrased (*cittakkharā cittavyañjanā*) and which are presented by the adherents of another school of thought, are recited, they will pay attention to them, give ear, produce a heart to know, etc. Thus, indeed, O Brethren, from the corruption of the Doctrine will follow the corruption of the Discipline, and *vice versa*. This is, O Brethren, the fourth future danger (to the Good Faith) which has not arisen now but may arise in the long run.'⁴

Evidently in the Buddha's opinion the appeal of a *kāvya* or poem lies to the emotional side of human nature, and that is made through the skilled art of versification, the rhetorical art of embellishment, and the charming phrases and idioms.

To be a poet and a faithful follower of the Buddha at the same time Āsvaghoṣa had no other alternative than to justify his indulgence in the art of poesy on the ground that it was just meant by him to administer sugar-coated quinine pills as a remedy to the epidemic of evil in the world. But he proved himself to be a pre-eminent poet in spite of himself, and while giving an admirable poetic garb to the tenets of salvation which are other-

¹ *Samyutta*, I, 110.

*Mandiyā nu sesī udāhu kāveyya-matto |
atthā nu te sampacurā na santi ||
eko vivitte sayanāsanamhi |
niddā mukho kiṃ idaṃ soppasevā ti ||*

² According to Rhys Davids the *arthakavi* means 'the poet of real life'.—*Buddhist India*, p. 184.

³ *Saundarananda*, XVIII, 63.

⁴ *Anguttara Nikāya*, III, p. 107. *Puna ca paraṃ bhikkhave bhavissanti bhikkhū anāgatamaddhānaṃ abhāvitakāyā, abhāvitacittā, abhāvitapaññā, . . . ye te suttantā Tathāgatabhāsītā gambhīrā gambhīratthā lokuttarā suññatāpaṭisaṃyuttā tesu bhaññamānesu na sussesissanti, na sotam odahissanti, na aññācittam upaṭṭhapessanti, na ca te dhamme uggaheṭṭabbam pariyāpuniṭabbam maññissanti, ye pana te suttantā kavikatā kāveyyā cittakkharā cittavyañjanā bāhirakā sāvakabhāsītā, tesu bhaññamānesu sussesissanti, sotam odahissanti, aññācittam upaṭṭhapessanti. . . . Iti kho bhikkhave Dhammasandosa Vinayasandoso, Vinayasandosa Dhammasandoso. Idaṃ bhikkhave caruttham anāgatabhayaṃ etarahi asamuppannam āyatiṃ samupparjissati.*

wise dull and uninteresting, he had to conform to all the laws and canons of kāvya poetry (*kāvyaadharmā*) and to adroitly employ all the means of prosody and rhetoric thereby enabling us to judge him as a poet apart from his position and mission as a bhikṣu and religious teacher.

As a poet Āsvaghoṣa is revealed to us through his two *kāvyas*, the *Buddhacarita*¹ and the *Saundarananda*² while, as a dramatist he stands or falls, in literary estimation by the merit of his *Sārīputraprakaraṇa*. The *Buddhacarita-kāvya* records the acts of the Buddha from his birth to his demise. In Pali literature there is a *kāvya* known as the *Jinacarita*³ dealing with the life of the Buddha less successfully on the model of Āsvaghoṣa's *Buddhacarita*. Keith is of opinion that none arose to surpass Āsvaghoṣa's achievement in depicting the life of the Buddha.⁴ The description of the entrance of the prince in the *Buddhacarita*⁵ is similar to that of the actions of the women of the city on the advent of Śiva and Pārvatī in the *Kumārasambhava*⁶ and this has also a parallel in the *Raghuvamśa*⁷ in connection with the entry of Aja and Indumatī.⁸ In the third canto of the *Buddhacarita* the descriptions of women with misplaced jewellery (v. 14), of the tumult and clinking of anklets which frightened the birds in the house (v. 15), of the females who were unable to move fast on account of heavy hips and breasts (v. 16), and of the rush of women at the windows whose ear-rings came into contact and whose faces like lotuses were bound into a bundle (v. 21) have their parallels in the *Kumārasambhava* (I, 4; III, 55; I, 11) and in the *Raghuvamśa* (XVI, 56).

A complete Sanskrit text of the *Buddhacarita* is not available. Samuel Beal offers us an English translation of the whole text from its Chinese version which also includes an account of the distribution of Buddha's relics and their enshrinement. In the Chinese version, the text of the *Buddhacarita*⁹ consists of twenty-eight cantos while in the Sanskrit text edited by Cowell and subsequently by Johnston the first thirteen cantos only can be claimed to be the composition of Āsvaghoṣa together perhaps with some portions of canto XIV. The remaining four cantos (XIV-XVII) added by Amrtānanda must be left out of account here.

MM. Shāstri has compared Cowell's edition of the *Buddhacarita* with the new manuscript which he received. He has noticed a passage consisting

¹ Edited by E. B. Cowell, 1893, and translated by him in *SBE*, Vol. 49; Translated into German by C. Cappeller and R. Schmidt, 1924; into Italian by C. Formichi; Poussin, *JRAS*, 1913, pp. 417-419; L. Finot, *JA*, 1898; E. Hultsch, *ZDMG*, 1918; E. H. Johnston, *JRAS*, 1927, *Buddhacarita* (Acts of the Buddha), Pts. I and II (Text and Translation); Madhava Shastri Bhandari, *Buddhacarita*, cantos II and III, 1929 (*Kāvyaśārasaṃgraha*); C. W. Gurner, *Some textual notes on Āsvaghoṣa's Buddhacarita*, *JASB*, 1926; E. W. Hopkins, *Buddhacarita*, *JAOS*, 1901; Dattatraya Shastri Nigudkar and K. M. Joglekar, *Buddhacarita* (cantos I-V), 1912; Gopal Raghunath Nandargikar, *The Buddhacaritam* (I-V), Poona, 1911; Lokur, *Buddhacaritam* (cantos I-V), 1912; Pandeya Jagannatha Prasad, *Āsvaghoṣa's Buddhacarita*, canto VIII, Bankipore, 1920; V. V. Sovani, *Buddhacaritam*, cantos I-V with notes, Poona, 1911.

² Edited by H. P. Shāstri (*Bibliotheca Indica Series*, 1910; re-issue in 1936 by Chintaharan Chakravartty); E. H. Johnston, *Saundaranandakāvya* (Text and Translation); *Saundaranandakāvya*, Bengali Translation, by B. C. Law (1st Ed. 1922 and 2nd Ed. 1923).

³ B. C. Law, *A History of Pali Literature*, II, pp. 614 foll. It is a Pali *kāvya* composed in different metres. It represents a poetic development in Pali similar to that represented by the *Buddhacarita* in the Sanskrit Buddhist literature.

⁴ *History of Sanskrit Literature*, 1928, p. 51.

⁵ III, 13-24.

⁶ VII, 56-69.

⁷ VII, 5-13.

⁸ Keith, *History of Sanskrit Literature*, 1928, p. 191; vide B. C. Law, *Saundarananda*, Bengali Tr., Preface.

⁹ Vide *Some critical notes on Āsvaghoṣa's Buddhacarita* by J. S. Speyer, *JRAS*, 1914, pp. 105-118.

of 11½ verses which was a lacuna in Cowell's work. The lacuna commences from the middle of the second line of verse 41 in chapter 9 of Cowell's edition. The eleven verses which he has quoted complete the sense of the context. These have been translated in the Chinese version in 16 verses. MM. Shāstrī has given a comparative table of the verses in each canto in the two translations by Cowell and Beal. He has shown from this table that the Chinese translation is a 'free one and not a close translation'.¹

Johnston² points out that Dr. F. Weller³ has concentrated on producing a correct Tibetan text of the *Buddhacarita* and an accurate translation of it. Johnston admits that he has derived much help from this work although he has not agreed with some of his interpretations. Here he has given his own conjectures regarding some of the variants. He has given a few corroborative references mainly from the Chinese translation, from the *Saundarananda*, from Āryasura's *Jātakamālā* and from Beal's *Romantic Legend of Śākya Buddha* which contains a number of passages taken direct from the *Buddhacarita* especially from canto IX.

We are not prepared to accept the views of Keith and Winternitz that *Saundarananda* was his first attempt.⁴ We do not agree with Hultsch who says that from the concluding verses it may be assumed that Aśvaghōṣa wrote the *Saundarananda* first and the *Buddhacarita* afterwards (ZDMG, 72, 121f.). Traces of fully developed kāvya poetry are found in the *Saundarananda* and not in the *Buddhacarita*. Had it been an earlier work, we could not have found such an advanced kāvya poetry in the *Saundarananda* which surely excels the *Buddhacarita* as a piece of poetry. The *Buddhacarita* is essentially the work of an artist. The poet shows his skill in depicting the loving ruses by which the ladies of the harem seek to divert the mind of the prince from the desire to renounce the vanities of the world. Keith says that Aśvaghōṣa was well skilled in the *Kāmasāstra*.⁵

The *Buddhacarita* is based either on the *Lalitavistara* or on the same materials and save in its spirit of devotion to the Buddha it is not markedly different from the *Hinayāna* as pointed out by Keith.⁶

The *Buddhacarita* has many points of agreement and difference with the *Lalitavistara* traditionally known as a *Sarvāstivāda* work. Some of the points of agreement are as follows:

On his return from Śuddhodana's palace Asita compassionately enjoined the son of his younger sister (i.e. Naraḍatta?) in every way to become the disciple of the sage (Buddha):

‘Kṛtamatiranujāsutaṃ ca dṛṣṭvā
munivacanaśravaṇe 'pi tanmatau ca |
bahuvidhamanukampayā sa sādhuḥ
priasutavadviniyojayāñcakāra' ||
(*Buddhacarita*, Canto I, verse 86.)

Cf. ‘Vande tvam varasārthavāha tribhave sarve jage pūjitam
Asitaḥ prāha ca bhāgineya muditaḥ samśrūyatām bhāṣato |
Buddhābodhi yadā śṛṇosi jagato varteti cakram hyayam
Śighram pravraja śāsane'sya munaye tatprāpsyase nirvṛtim' ||
(*Lalitavistara*, Lefmann's Ed., p. 111.)

¹ A new manuscript of *Buddhacarita*, JPASB, 1909, N.S. pp. 47-49.

² JRAS, 1927, Pt. I, January, pp. 209-226.

³ *Das Leben des Buddha von Aśvaghōṣa*, Leipzig, 1926—Tibetan text with German translation covering cantos I-VIII.

⁴ *History of Sanskrit Literature*, 1928, p. 57; *History of Indian Literature*, II, p. 262.

⁵ *History of Sanskrit Literature*, p. 58; cf. *Buddhacarita* (Cowell), Book XI, vv. 22-34.

⁶ *Buddhist Philosophy*, p. 227.

Cf. Also '... tatra khalvasito maharṣirnaradattaṃ mānavakametada-vocat. Yādā Naradatta śrṇuyā buddho loke utpanna iti tadā tvam gatvā tasya śāsane pravrajeh. Tatte bhaviṣyati dirgharātramarthāya hitāya sukhāyeti' (*Ibid.*, p. 108).

'Attano santikaṃ āgataṃ āha:

Tāta Suddhodanamahārājassa kule putto jāto Buddhakuro, esa pañcatimsa-vassāni atikkamitvā Buddho bhaviṣṣatīti, tvam etaṃ datṭhum labhissasīti, ajj'eva pabbajāhīti.'

(*Nidānakathā, Jātaka, Vol. I, p. 55.*)

Since a universal accomplishment of all objects took place with the birth of Siddhārtha, the newly born baby is named accordingly:

'Evaṃvidhā rājasutasya tasya
Sarvārthasiddhiśca yato babhūva |
Tato nṛpastasya sutasya nāma
Sarvārthasiddho'yamiti pracakre' ||
(*Buddhacarita, Canto II, verse 17.*)

Cf. 'Asya hi jātāmātreṇa mama sarvārthaḥ samsiddhiḥ. Yannvaha-masya Sarvārthasiddha iti nāma kuryām. Tato rājā Bodhisattvaṃ Sarvārthasiddho'yam kumāro nāmnā bhavatu iti nāmāsyākārṣit.'

(*Lalitavistara, Lefmann's Ed., pp. 95ff.*)

Cf. 'Jātāmātre kumāre 'rthasiddhī sukhī sarvasatvā abhū yāvadavī-cim utthāpaniyā gāthā:

Jāte jagapradhāne sarve
arthā pradakṣiṇā rājño |
Tena naralambakasya nāmaṃ
Sarvārthasiddha iti ||'
(*Mahāvastu, II, p. 26.*)

Assuming the majestic form of an elephant, white like the Himalaya mountain, with six tusks, the Bodhisattva entered the womb of Māyā.

'Dhrtvā himādrīdhavalam gur śadviṣṇaṃ
dānādhiṃvāsitaṃ mukhaṃ dviradasyarūpaṃ |
Suddhodanasya vasudhādhipatermahīṣyāḥ
kuṣṇiṃ viveśa sa jagadvyaśanākṣayāya' ||
(*Buddhacarita, Canto I, verse 20.*)

Cf. 'Himarajata nikāśascandra sūryātirekaḥ
sucarāṇa suvishaktaḥ śadviṣṇomahātmā
gajabaru dṛḍhasandhi vajrakalpassurūpaḥ
udari mama praviṣṭastasya.' ||
(*Lalitavistara, Lefmann's Ed., p. 56.*)

'Atha Bodhisatto setavaravāraṇo hutvā uttaradisato āgama rajatadāmavannāya soṇḍāya setapadumaṃ gahetvā koñcanādaṃ naditvā kanakavimānaṃ pavisitvā mātusayanaṃ tikkhattuṃ padakkhiṇaṃ katvā dakkhiṇapassaṃ tāletvā kucchiṃ pavitṭhasadisō ahoṣi.'

(*Nidānakathā, Jātaka, Vol. I, p. 50.*)

Cf. also *Mahāvastu, II, p. 20.*

Regarding the unusual way of the birth of Bodhisattva, Aśvaghōṣa speaks thus:

'Pārśvātsuto lokahitāya jajñe
nirvedanaṃ caiva nirāmayam ca'
(*Buddhacarita, Canto I, verse 25.*)

Cf. 'Jāte Bodhisattve mātuh kuṣipārśvamakṣatam-
anupahatamabhavadyathā pūrvam tathā pascāt'
(*Lalitavistara*, p. 96.)

Cf. again: ' . . . adyo jame sarvaloke hitam'
(*Ibid.*, p. 92.)

Cf. also *Nidānakathā*, *Jātaka*, Vol. I, pp. 52-53.

The *Lalitavistara* agrees in toto with the *Buddhacarita*, when Aśva-
ghoṣa describes that the Bodhisattva's toes and fingers were webbed and that
there was a tuft of hair between his brows and that his testicles were with-
drawn from sight like those of an elephant:

' . . . Jālāvanaddhāṅgulipāṇipādam
Soraṇabhruvāṃ vāraṇavastikoṣam'
(*Buddhacarita*, Canto I, verse 65.)

Cf. 'Urṇā . . . sarvārthasiddhasya kumārasya bhruvormadhye jātā
. . . . koṣapagatavastiguhyah . . . jālāṅgulihastapādāh'
(*Lalitavistara*, pp. 105ff.)

Bodhisattva's determination to vanquish Māra as we find in the
Buddhacarita bears a close resemblance with that in the *Lalitavistara*.¹

The account in the *Buddhacarita* of Siddhārtha bewildering Śuddhodana
who tried to dissuade him from renouncing the world is similar to that
found in the *Lalitavistara*.²

The following are some of the points of disagreement:

'Tasyātisobhāvisṛtātisobhā raviprabhevāstatamaḥ prabhāvā |
Samagradevī nivahāgradevī babhūva māyāpagateva Māyā' ||
(Canto I, verse 15.)

The above description of Māyā in the *Buddhacarita* is not to be found
in the *Lalitavistara*.

Cf. 'Śuddhodanasya pramadā pradhānā nārīsaahasreṣu hi sāgraprāptā
manoramā māyakṛteva vimbam nāmena sā ucyati Māyādevī.'
(Lefmann's Ed., p. 28.)

'Tato mātaram vilokento "Buddhamātā nāma lolā surādhuttā na hoti,
kappasatasahassam pana pūritapāramī, jātito paṭṭhāya akhaṇḍapañcasilā-
yeva hoti, ayañ ca Mahāmāyā nāma devī edisā, ayañ ca me mātā bhavissatī".
ti.'

(*Nidānakathā*, *Jātaka*, Vol. I, p. 49.)

According to Aśvaghōṣa the palm of the Buddha was marked with the
wheel whereas in the *Lalitavistara* the feet were so marked:

'Cakrāṅkapāṇim sa tathā maharṣir . . .'
(Canto I, verse 64.)

Cf. ' . . . tasya tau sucaraṇau cakrāṅkitau śobhanau'
(*Lalitavistara*, Lefmann's Ed., p. 110.)

Cf. also 'Pādataḥ yormahārāja (Lefmann's Edition reads differently)
Sarvārthasiddhasya cakre jāte (R. L. Mitra's edition of *Lalitavistara*, p. 121).
Cf. *Buddhavaṃsa*, I, 37—*Yathā tuyhaṃ mahāvīra pādesu cakkalakkhaṇaṃ*.

¹ *Buddhacarita*, canto XIII, vv. 1-2. Cf. *Lalitavistara* (Lefmann's Ed.), pp. 299ff.
Cf. also *Nidānakathā*, *Jātaka*, Vol. I, pp. 71-72.

² *Buddhacarita*, canto V, vv. 34-35; cf. *Lalitavistara*, (Lefmann's Ed.), p. 199.

In the *Buddhacarita*, Asita controls himself while weeping for not being able to live to see Siddhārtha attaining Buddhahood whereas in the *Lalitavistara* he freely does so:

‘Dhātryaṅkaśaṃ viṣṭamavekṣya cainaṃ
devyamkaśaṃ viṣṭamivāgnisūnum |
Babhūva pakṣmāntarivāñcitāśrurniśvasya
caivaṃ tridivonmukho’bhūt ||

Dr̥ṣtvāsitam tvaśrupariplutākṣam
snehāttu putrasya nr̥paścakampe |
Sagadgadam bāpakaśāyakanṭhaḥ
papraccha ca prāñjalirānatāṅgaḥ ||

Svalpāntaram yasya vapurmuneḥ syād
vahudbhutam yasya ca janma diptam |
Yasyottamam bhāvinamāttha cārtham
taṃ prekṣya kasmāttava dhīra vāṣpaḥ’ ||

(*Buddhacarita*, Canto I, verses 66–68.)

Cf. ‘Pratyatthāya tataḥ kṛtāñjalipuṭo caraṇāni so vandate
aṅke gṛhya mahātmaśāstrakusalinidhyāyati prekṣate |
So’pśyadvaralakṣanaiḥ Kavacitam nārāyaṇasthāmavam
śiṣam kampya sa vedaśāstrakuśalo dve tasya paśyadgati ||

Rājā vābhavi cakravartī balavān buddho vā lokottamaḥ
vāṣpaṃ tyakta sudīnakāyamanasi gambhīra nīśvasya ca |
udvignaśca vabhūva pārthivavaraḥ kim brāhmaṇo roditi
mā vighnaṃ khalu paśyate’yamasitaḥ sarvārthasiddhasya me ||
Bhītaṃ vyāhara kim tu rodiṣi ṛṣe śreyo’tha kim pāpakam
Pāpaṃ nāsti na cāntārāyamiha bhoḥ sarvārthasiddhasya te’

(*Lalitavistara*, Lefmann’s Ed., pp. 110ff.)

In the *Jātaka-nidānakathā* (I, 55) the sage Kāladevala (Asita) freely wept when he perceived that he would not survive to see the Bodhisattva attaining Buddhahood.

‘Tato ahaṃ imaṃ Buddhabhūtaṃ datṭhum labhissāmi nu kho’ti
upadhārento’na labhissāmi, antarā yeva kālam katvā Arūpabhava
nibbattissāmi’ti disvā ‘mahatī vata me jāni bhavissatī’ti parodi’.

Cf. also *Mahāvastu*, II, p. 32.

The description of Sarvārthasiddha’s marriage with Yaśodharā (= *Gopā* of the *Lalitavistara*) in the *Buddhacarita* is somewhat different from that of the *Lalitavistara* (*Buddhacarita*, Canto II, verses 26–27; cf. *Lalitavistara*, pp. 141, 142 and 159).

Buddhacarita—

Kulāttato’smai sthiraśīlasamyutātsādhvīm vapurhrī vinayopapannām |
Yaśodharām nāma yaśoviśālām tulyābhidhānām śriyamājuhāva ||
(v. 26)

Athāparam bhūmipateḥ priyo’yam Sanatkumārpratimaḥ kumāraḥ |
Sārdham tayā Śākyanarendravadhvā śacyā sahaśrākṣa ivābhireme ||
(v. 27)

Cf. *Lalitavistara*: The Prince was asked about the girl he desired to marry. The priest who was sent to find out a girl of prince’s liking met the daughter of Daṇḍapāṇi who gave her consent thus:

‘bhaṇahi kumāru yadi kārya mahū vilamba
mā hīnaprākṛtajanena bhaveya vāsaḥ’ (p. 141)

'Tell the prince not to make delay (in marrying me). He should not mix with ordinary people.'

The king then arranged for a party where the prince alone had to distribute gifts among the girls present. Gopā, the daughter of Daṇḍapāṇi, who was present there, fixed her steadfast gaze on the Bodhisattva. Then both of them (Gopā and the Prince) thus indulged in courtship:

'Bodhisattvena sarvānyaśokabhāṇḍakāni dattāni. Tadā sā (Gopā) Bodhisattvamupasaṃkramya prahasitavadanā Bodhisattvamevamāha:

Kumāra kiṃ te mayāpanitam yastvaṃ mām vimānayasi.

Āha: nāhaṃ tvām vimānayāmyapi tu khalu punastvamabhīpaścādā-gateti. Sa tasyai cānekaśatasahasramūlyamaṅguliyaṃ nirmucya prādāt.

Sā prāha: Idamaḥaṃ kumāra tavāntikādarhāmi.

Āha: Imāni madīyānyābharaṇāni gṛhyantām.

Sā āha: na vayaṃ kumāraṃ vyalakṣyaṃ vamaḥ
Alakṣyaṃ vamaḥ kumāraṃ' (p. 142)

Those who were engaged by the king to watch them in secret reported to the king thus:

'Deva Daṇḍapāṇeḥ Śākyasya duhitā Gopā nāma śākyakanyā tasyām kumārasya cakṣurniviṣṭaṃ muhūrtaṃ ca tayoḥ saṃlāpo'bhūt.' (p. 142)

On hearing this the king approached Daṇḍapāṇi and allowed the prince to marry Gopā:

'Yathā ca putro mama bhūsito guṇaiḥ
Tathā ca kanyā svaguṇā prabhāṣate |
Vīśuddhasattvau tadubhau samāgatau
sameti sarpiryathā sarpimaṇḍe || (p. 159)

The *Saundarananda kāvya* which is chronologically later than the *Buddhacarita* is a poem consisting of eighteen cantos. As a piece of poetry it excels the *Buddhacarita*. It is undoubtedly one of the most noteworthy specimens of Sanskrit kāvya literature. Its earlier cantos contain a kind of resumé of the *Buddhacarita*¹ which means that the latter poem is pre-supposed by it, and not *vice versa*. It has for its theme the Buddhist story of conversion by the Buddha of his step-brother Nanda who was married to Sundarī, a rare female beauty of her time. No Tibetan translation has as yet been found of this poem. A Buddhist work translated by Beal from the Chinese under the title of the *Romantic Legend of Śākyā Buddha* not only contains a version of the story of Nanda's conversion suggesting an acquaintance with Aśvaghōṣa's narrative but also lays the *Buddhacarita* in its earlier part frequently under contribution.

MM. Dr. Haraprasad Shāstri in his paper entitled 'The Recovery of a Lost Epic by Aśvaghōṣa' says that a new ancient epic poem entitled *Saundarananda-kāvya* written by Aśvaghōṣa, a great poet, musician and philosopher of the first century of the Christian era, who was the spiritual preceptor of the greatest Indo-Scythian monarch Kanīṣka, has been discovered. Aśvaghōṣa was the first great writer of the Mahāyāna School of Buddhism and the author of the first artistic epic in Sanskrit, the *Buddhacarita*. He says that it was not known whether he had written any other great work in poetry though some beautiful songs are attributed to him by the Chinese and the Tibetans. The style of the new poem *Saundarananda-kāvya* is the same as that of the *Buddhacarita*; the sentiments, the religious teaching, the boldness in deviating from the rules of Pāṇini and the versification and the language are the same. This poem deals with the great love

¹ JASB, N.S., Vol. V, 1909.

which Nanda, half-brother of Buddha, bore for his wife Sundari. Then it describes how Buddha took Nanda to his hermitage and made him a mendicant. Nanda was anxious to return to the world and to his wife, but Buddha always persuaded him to persist in his mendicant life. Now this spiritual struggle between Buddha and his royal disciple forms the central point of interest of this fascinating epic. During the course of this struggle Buddha takes him to heaven and shows that even heaven should not be worthy of one's desire and ends the work by giving a taste of the nectar of *Nirvāṇa*. In the first chapter Āsvaghoṣa gives a description of Kapilavastu as a great hermitage. In the last colophon, Āsvaghoṣa the author is described as a Bhadanta, as a Sāketaka, meaning born at Sāketa or Ayodhyā and as Suvarṇākṣaputra. The same colophon is given in the Tibetan version of Āsvaghoṣa's *Buddhacarita*. So we see that there is no doubt as to the authorship of these two works *Saundarananda* and *Buddhacarita*. A complete work of *Buddhacarita* in original Sanskrit has not yet been obtained anywhere. Dr. Shāstri says that he at first thought the *Saundarananda-kāvya* to be another name for the lost portion of the *Buddhacarita*, but all his doubts have been dispelled by a comparison of Beal's translation of the Chinese version of the *Buddhacarita* and the *Saundarananda-kāvya*. In 1907 he saw a palm leaf manuscript of this poem. The first line is complete. Several letters of the second have disappeared in the centre, many more of the third and subsequent lines. He then got a paper manuscript from the Librarian of the Nepal Durbar Library and had it copied. Thanks to the efforts of MM. Dr. Shāstri to discover this excellent work of Āsvaghoṣa; we have it now in toto published in the *Bibliotheca Indica series* (No. 1251, 1910 and re-issued in 1939 No. 1524) of the Royal Asiatic Society of Bengal.

C. W. Gurner in his Notes on the Text of Āsvaghoṣa's *Saundarananda*¹ has given his own interpretations of some passages of the *Saundarananda-kāvya* in order to make the meaning clear. Some of his interpretations no doubt help to improve the meaning as in *Saktaḥ* (7th sarga, verse 20) in place of *Saktaḥ*. In the 4th sarga, 14th śloka, he has drawn the readers' attention to the *Raghuvaṃśa* (VII, 68) which suggests *vāspena* for *vātena*. In the 13th sarga, verse 22, he suggests *saṃvedaḥ* (*saṃvedaḥ saṃvido jñānadarśanam*) in place of *saṃvegaḥ*.² In the 14th sarga, verse 48, his suggestion to read *kr̥ṣṭodgatā* ('straying into the cultivated field') in place of *kr̥ṣṭādako* is good (*kr̥ṣṭādako gauriva śasyamadhyāt*). In the 9th sarga, verse 34, his reading of *balavān* in place of *karavān* is appropriate. Āsvaghoṣa has used the word *balavān* in verse 60 of the 15th sarga of the *Saundarananda-kāvya* as pointed out by Gurner—'*Prasūtaḥ puruṣo loke śrutavān balavānapi*'.

Āsvaghoṣa's predilection for subjects dealing with conversion may be taken to suggest a personal reason. The reverie of thought may even go so far as to presume that the poet has revealed his own personal history through the career of Nanda which he masterfully delineated.

The doctrine of vacuity (*śūnyatā*) has been alluded to in the *Saundarananda-kāvya*³ which incidentally gives much information on the faith and the same doctrine together with the distinction of absolute and apparent truth is found in another treatise attributed on Chinese authority to Āsvaghoṣa.⁴

¹ JRAS, 1928, Pt. I—January, pp. 131-132.

² *Vairāgyasyāpi saṃvegaḥ saṃvido jñānadarśanaśu*.

³ Cf. Baston, JA, 1912, I, 79ff.; Hultzsch, ZDMG, LXXII, 111ff., LXXIII, 229ff.

⁴ JRAS, 1914, pp. 747 foll.

Poussin says that H. P. Shāstrī and M. A. Baston¹ assume that Āsvaghoṣa's *Saundarananda-kāvya* is a Mahāyāna work. He does not see any evidence in favour of this view. Whether the author of the *Buddhacarita*, the *Saundarananda* and the *Sūtrālaṅkāra* (translated from the Chinese by E. Huber, Paris, 1908) is also the author of the *Mahāyānaśraddhotpāda* is by no means evident. It is clear that there is no tinge of Mahayanism in the *Saundarananda*.²

The *Śāriputraprakaraṇa* of which only a few passages are extant in a central Asian manuscript is found to be a nine act play, having the story of the conversion of Śāriputra and Maudgalyāyana for its theme. It deals with the events which led up to the conversion of the young Maudgalyāyana and Śāriputra by the Buddha and some of the incidents are certain. Śāriputra had an interview with Āsvajit, then he discussed the question of the claims of the Buddha to be a teacher with his friend, the Vidūṣaka, who raised the objection that a Brahmin like his master should not accept the teaching of a Kṣatriya. Śāriputra repels the objection. Maudgalyāyana greets Śāriputra asking him the cause of his glad appearance and learns his reasons. The two go to the Buddha who receives them and who foretells to them that they will be the highest in knowledge of the Buddha's disciples. In this point there is a deliberate and artistic deviation from the ordinary version of the incident followed in the *Buddhacarita* in which the prophecy of the Buddha is addressed not to the disciples themselves but to others of the Buddha's followers. The end of the play is marked by a philosophic dialogue between Śāriputra and the Buddha which includes a polemic against the belief in the existence of a permanent self; it terminates in the praise of his two new disciples by the Buddha and a formal benediction.³

The most remarkable thing regarding the *Śāriputraprakaraṇa* is its close correspondence to the classical type of drama as laid down in the *Nāṭyaśāstra*. It is a *prakaraṇa* and has nine acts, which accords perfectly with the rule of the Śāstra. The acts bear no titles. This is in accordance with the normal usage. The hero is Śāriputra who corresponds to the Brahmin hero of the Śāstra and who is of the noble and calm type. Whether the heroine was a lady or a *hetæra* we do not know. The Buddha and his disciples speak Sanskrit and use both prose and verse and the Vidūṣaka speaks Prakrit. The presence of this figure is a remarkable proof of the steady character attained by the drama. There is nothing more absurd than that a youthful ascetic seeking after truth should be troubled by one who is a proper attendant on a wealthy merchant, Brahmin or a minister. Āsvaghoṣa wrote a type of drama in which the rôle of such characters was too firmly embedded to permit its omission. In the story of the drama now lost to us the Vidūṣaka was introduced for comic relief. He disappears from the last act where Śāriputra had no need as a member of the Buddhist fraternity for a jester. We find a clear discrepancy between Āsvaghoṣa's practice and that of the later drama only in one point. In the later drama we find that the phrase *ataḥparam api priyaṃ asti* occurs but in the drama of Āsvaghoṣa this phrase is omitted and the benediction proceeds without prelude with the word spoken by the Buddha: 'from now on shall these two ever increase their knowledge, restraining their senses to gain release.' It appears that Āsvaghoṣa did not recognize the traditional usage. He was

¹ J.A., 1912, I, pp. 79-100.

² *Critical notes to Saundarananda-kāvya* by L. V. Poussin in the *Bulletin of the School of Oriental Studies*, London Institution, Vol. I (1917-1920), pp. 133-140.

³ The conversion of Śāriputra and his friend Maudgalyāyana is also related in the *Mahāvagga* of the *Vinayapiṭaka*, I (PTS), pp. 39 foll.

acquainted with the usage and he had the power to vary it in case of need. In the *Śāriputraprakaraṇa* we find the allegorical figures of *buddhi* (wisdom), *kīrti* (fame), and *dhṛti* (firmness), appearing and conversing. This is followed by the advent of the Buddha himself adorned with the halo. In this drama we find the *hetāra* named Magadhavati, a Vidūṣaka named Komu-dhagandha, a hero named Nāyaka, a Duṣṭa (rogue), a maid-servant, Śāri-putra and Maudgalyāyana. The drama is doubtless intended for the purposes of religious edification. It is too fragmentary to show that the author was possessed of humour. The drama alludes to an old garden as the place where part of the action passed as in the *Mr̥cchakaṭikā* and the house of the *hetāra* served as the scene of another part of the action. The drama shows close agreement with the classical model as the name of Vidūṣaka shows. The name of the *hetāra* does not observe the rule exemplified in the *Cārudatta*. The fact that the Duṣṭa and the Nāyaka appear by these titles only has a parallel in the *Cārudatta* and the *Nāgānanda*, a Buddhist drama of Harṣa.

In this drama we find the Buddha, his disciples, the hero of the *hetāra* play, and Dhanāñjaya speaking Sanskrit which is faulty. The errors in Sanskrit are Prakritisms. There is no doubt that the Sanskrit is excellent and the fragments show traces of able versification and the style of Aśvaghoṣa. The other characters speak Prakrit. Three different forms of Prakrit may be distinguished: the first spoken by the Duṣṭa (rogue), the second by the mysterious Goban and the third by the *hetāra* and the Vidūṣaka. The Duṣṭa's speech is generally similar to the Māgadhī of the Prakrit grammarians. The Prakrit of the Goban agrees with the old Māgadhī in having *l* for *r* and *e* in the nominative singular, but it reduces all sibilants to 's'. Other points of similarity are the retention of the dental for cerebral in *vaṇṇa*, the lengthening of the vowel before the suffix 'k', the accusative plural neuter in *pupphā* and the infinitive 'bhumjīṭaye'. Śaurasenī is ascribed to the *hetāra* by the Śāstra which gives *prācya* or eastern dialect to the Vidūṣaka. There is no softening or omission of intervocalic consonance as in the other Prakrits of the drama. In the words of the *hetāra* the word *Surada* occurs with softening of *t* to *d*. In the dialect of the Duṣṭa we have a form *makkataḥo* which may be genitive as in Apabhramṣa. It is interesting to study the language of the drama which contains many archaic features of Pali and the dialects of the older inscriptions. The drama of Aśvaghoṣa has no clear evidence of Mahārāṣṭri at all. Ardhamāgadhī is prescribed for slaves (*ceṭas*), *rājaputras*, and guildsmen (*śreṣṭhino*).¹

The fragments of the two plays have been found by Lüders,² along with those of Aśvaghoṣa's *Śāriputraprakaraṇa*. The first of them appears to be a Buddhist allegory and the second one is concerned with the love affair of a young nāyaka called Somadatta ending probably in his conversion to the Buddhist faith.

The fragment of the allegorical play contains rhymes composed much in Aśvaghoṣa's style. If the surmise that Somadatta's love affair ended in his conversion to Buddhism be correct, the plot of the second play is based on a story which is substantially the same as that of Aśvaghoṣa's *Saundarananda-kāvya*. 'The motif of the lover holding his mistress's mirror' forms a central point in both. But the occurrence of three verses in the *Sragdharā* metre which became popular with later Buddhists, specially those of Kashmir, goes against connecting the second play with any of

¹ Keith, *Sanskrit Drama*, p. 336. Cf. *Udāna*, *Nandavagga*, III, 2, pp. 21 foll.

² *Bruchstücke Buddhistischer Dramen* (1911); *Sitzungsberichte der Königl. Akademie der Wissenschaften zu Berlin*.

the three known works of Āsvaghoṣa. The occurrence of two verses in the *Harinī* metre and one in the *Āryā* goes alike against the presumption as to the second play being a work of Āsvaghoṣa (Johnston, *The Buddhacarita*, II, Intro., pp. xviii ff.). According to Levi, Āsvaghoṣa was the author of a lyrical drama treating the legends of Rāṣṭrapāla (*JA*, 213, 1928, pp. 200 foll.).

Āsvaghoṣa's indebtedness for phrases and idioms, thoughts and ideas becomes greater and more palpable when we consider his kāvyas in reference to the two epics and the earlier Buddhist works. As regards the Great Epic, Johnston would, for the striking parallels, draw our attention particularly to the story of Nala and the *Bhagavadgītā*. One may observe that it was not only the *Gītā*, but the *Gītāmāhātmya* as well which was in the literary background of Āsvaghoṣa's works. In the *Saundarananda* (XVIII, 11) Nanda says that he had all his desires appeased after the drinking, like a calf from the cow, of the Buddha's teaching, 'with the teats of benevolence, the beautiful dewlap of clear expression, the milk of the good law and the horn of imagination'.

Maitristanīm vyañjana-cārusāsnām saddharmadugdhāmpratibhāna-
śṛṅgām |
tavāsmi gām sādhu nipiya trpta-trṣeva gāmuttamavatsavarnāḥ ||

This reminds us at once of the stanza 5 in the *Gītāmāhātmya* which reads:

sarvopaniṣado gāvo, dogdhā Gopāla-nandanāḥ |
Pārtho vatsaḥ, sudhir bhoktā, dugdhām Gītāmṛtaṁ mahat ||

It may be rightly pointed out that some of the verses of the *Saundarananda* are no doubt good sayings. As a piece of poetry the *Saundarananda* excels the *Buddhacarita*. It is not wanting in high poetic excellence. The style is very graceful. It contains beautiful similes which amply testify to the fact that Āsvaghoṣa was a great poet. It contains some peculiar nominal and verbal forms.¹ In the two kāvyas of Āsvaghoṣa cognate accusative is found frequently especially with verbs meaning to speak. Upasarga 'prati' has been used with the accusative to denote the various case relations. The locative is used with a number of substantives and adjectives in various case-ideas. The absolute genitive does not occur in the *Saundarananda*. The perfect participle is used both as an adjective and a finite verb. The past participles are generally used with a finite verb. The passive imperative is also found. The conjunctive has sometimes been used ungrammatically. Some phrases and idioms occur frequently in the *Saundarananda*. Finite verbs are often used. Desiderative formations may be noticed. Yamaka is not rare in Āsvaghoṣa's works (*Pranastavatsyām iva vatsalām gām*). Āsvaghoṣa adopts the *udgatā* for Canto III of the *Saundarananda*.² The *Suvadanā* and the *Vardhamāna* species of the *upasthitapracupita* are also found.³

The metres employed by Āsvaghoṣa are very numerous. At the time of Āsvaghoṣa the distinction between prose and verse, essentially lyric in type, was fixed and the elaborate structure of the verse normally with

¹ JPASB, N.S., Vol. XXVI, 1930, 181ff.

² Keith, *History of Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 63-64.

³ Cf. *Saundarananda*, II, 65; Jacobi, *ZDMG*, XXXVIII, 603.

udvegātpunarbhava manāḥ pravādhāya
sa yayau śayitavarāṅganādanāśīḥ |
nīśi nṛpatinīlayānādvānagamānakṛtamanāḥ
sarasa iva mathitanālinātkalahamsaḥ ||

four lines of equal length and identic structure rendered it quite unsuitable as a medium of conversation.¹

Gurner² in dealing with the style of Aśvaghōṣa points out that it is a mixture of naive effort and artificial embellishment. Aśvaghōṣa often builds up his lines in well-knit descriptive phrases which lack the harmony of the later kāvyas and recall the elaborate descriptive passages in the epic literature. Sometimes he gives a long series of nouns or verbs for the sake of mere emphasis and we notice an incessant stream of *anuprāsa* (synonyms), *yamaka*, and simple puns typical of an early stage in the development of *Alaṅkāra*. His style differs widely from that of the epic but its leading features are undoubtedly epic in character. Thus '*kṛtsnam kṛtaṁ me kṛtakāryya kāryyam*',³ '*Kulasya nāndījananaśca nandaḥ*',⁴ and '*Kācit-padmavanādetya sapadmā padmalocanā padmavaktrasya pārśve'sya padmaśrīriva tasthuṣi*'⁵ are epic in fashion and as such insipid in comparison with the style of the later kāvyas. Labourered construction and the practice of piling up verbs and nouns as we find in the *Rāmāyaṇa* (IV, xxviii, 27) may be found in Aśvaghōṣa.⁶ The use of hyperboles and rhetorical repetition of the concluding pāda of a śloka are also common in the *Rāmāyaṇa* and in the works of Aśvaghōṣa.⁷ The doubling of the gerundive verb⁸ has its parallels in the epic.⁹

The grammatical usage of Aśvaghōṣa stands between that of the epics and of Kālidāsa. The self-expression in Aśvaghōṣa's poetry gave the introspective thought a place in literary Sanskrit.¹⁰

Although the Jātaka version of the story of Rṣyaśṛṅga is almost the same as that in the great epic, Aśvaghōṣa's allusion to it with the express mention of the king's daughter as Sāntā by her name,¹¹ presupposes the legend in the two epics. The tradition of Tālajaṅgha as alluded to by Aśvaghōṣa differed from that in a stanza incorporated in Kauṭilya's *Arthaśāstra*:

rakto girermūrdhani Menakāyām
kāmātmakatvācca sa Tālajaṅghaḥ |
pādena Viśvāvasunā saroṣaṁ vajreṇa
hintāla ivābhijaghne ||

(S., VII, 39.)

kopāḥ Janamejāyo Brāhmaṇeṣu vikrāntaḥ
Tālajaṅghaś ca Bhṛguṣu.
(*Arthaśāstra*, I, 6.)

The stanzas cited in the *Arthaśāstra*, I, 6, refer to the destruction of Dāṇḍakya Bhoja and Karāla Vaideha on account of a lascivious attempt (kāmāt) on a Brahmin maiden, while the Jātakas preserve a tradition which accounts differently for the destruction of king Dāṇḍaki. It is yet to be ascertained what were precisely the sources of the legends of Hiranyaretaś and Svāhā, Indra and Ahalyā, Sūrya and Saranyū, Vaiśvata and Agni,

¹ Keith, *Sanskrit Drama*, p. 90.

² JPASB, N.S., Vol. XXIII (1927), pp. 347-67.

³ *Saundarananda*, XVIII, 10.

⁴ *Ibid.*, IV, 6.

⁵ *Buddhacarita*, IV, 36.

⁶ *Saundarananda* VI, 34; *Buddhacarita*, V, 42; *Saundarananda*, XVII, 59.

⁷ Cf. *Buddhacarita*, IX, 68; VIII, 46; XI, 23; *Rāmāyaṇa*, III, XXXVII, 37-54;

V., xlii, 18

⁸ *Saundarananda*, VI, 27.

⁹ *Rāmāyaṇa*, IV, XXVIII, 22.

¹⁰ JPASB, N.S., Vol. XXIII, 1927, pp. 347-67.

¹¹ *Saundarananda*, VII, 34.

Vaśiṣṭha and Akṣamālā, Parāśara and Kālī, Dvaipāyana and a harlot in Kāśī, Āṅgīras and Sarasvatī, Dilīpa, Kāśyapa and a divine damsel, Āṅgada and Yamunā, Gādhin and Ghṛtācī, Sthūlāśīras and Rambhā, Pramadvārā and a serpent, Budha's son and Urvaśī, Jahnu and his wife, Śantanu and Gaṅgā, Somavarman, Saunandakin and Urvaśī, Bhīmaka-Senāka and his wife, Janamejaya and Śantanu's widow, Pāṇḍu and Mādri, alluded to by Aśvaghōṣa in his kāvyas.¹ Similarly one has got to find out the source of the allusion to the cause of the destruction of the Kurus, Andhaka-Vṛṣṇis, and the Mekhala-Daṇḍakas.

If the *Buddhacarita* be the earlier of the two kāvyas of Aśvaghōṣa, as it undoubtedly is, two questions are apt to arise in this connection: (1) What is the earlier model on which it was based? (2) Whether or not its Sanskrit text in Cowell's edition represents the Indian original of its Chinese version bearing the title of *Fo-sho-hing-tsan-king*? It is easy to answer the second question in the affirmative. By comparing the English renderings of the Sanskrit text and the Chinese version none can help coming to the conclusion that if the Indian original of the Chinese version differed anywhere from the former, it must have been on some minor points of variation in readings.

As to the earlier model, it is found in neither of the two great Sanskrit epics nor in any other Brahmanical or Jaina work. Our attention has been drawn to the stanzas constituting the prologue to the *Nālaka Sutta* in the *Sutta-nipāta*, suggesting that this prologue of which the composition was a matter of accident served as the earlier literary model for a consistent self-conscious attempt on the part of Aśvaghōṣa for the production of a magnificent kāvya on the life of the Buddha.²

The original title of the *Nālaka Sutta*, as given in Asoka's Bhabru Edict, is *Moneyya Sutta*. The prologue (*Vatthugāthā*), while supplying the historical context to this discourse, incidentally narrates the visit of Rṣi Asita, the Indian Simeon, to Kapilavastu to see the newly born Bodhisattva in the house of king Śuddhodana, and to predict his future greatness as a Perfect Buddha. The self-same theme is poetically dealt with in the *Mahāvastu* (II, pp. 33-43), as well as in the *Lalitavistara* (VII). This is treated also in a magnificent kāvya like the *Buddhacarita*.³ So far as the *Mahāvastu* is concerned, the mixed Sanskrit counterpart of the Pali *Nālaka Sutta* is presented apart from the story of Asita. Three stages in the development of the Sutta concerned are apparent. In the first stage it passed off till the time of Asoka as the *Moneyya Sutta* without the historical context bringing in Nālaka as the interlocutor. In the second, it came to bear, with the context supplied, the title of *Nālaka Sutta*. And in the third the prologue appeared with the Nālaka context expanded into a distinct poem on the rôle of Asita in the life of the Buddha.

The three poets dealt independently with the same theme with a common Buddhist legend behind them, producing three poems of distinctive literary effect. The prose legend which is met with in the *Jātaka Nidānakathā*⁴ may be treated as a common presupposition of them all.

¹ *Saundarananda*, VII, 25-45; *Buddhacarita*, IV, 79.

² Barua, *Old Brāhmī Inscriptions in the Udayagiri and Khandagiri Caves*, p. 172.

³ See J. Muir's instructive article—*Asita and Buddha or the Indian Simeon* in *I.A.*, 1878, Sept., Bapat's edition of the *Sutta-nipāta*, p. 102.

⁴ Fausboll's *Jātaka*, I, pp. 54f. It is not claimed that the legend as narrated in the *Nidānakathā* is itself anterior to the Prologue to the *Nālaka Sutta*. All that is suggested above is that what the form of the earlier prose legend might be, can be inferred from the *Nidāna* version.

Pali *Nālaka Sutta*—*vatthugāthā*, 8-9; *Sutta-nipāta* (PTS), p. 133.

Tato kumāraṃ jalitaṃ iva suvaṇṇaṃ
ukkāmukhe va sukusala-sampahaṭṭhaṃ |
dadallamānaṃ siriyaṃ anomavaṇṇaṃ
dassesu puttaṃ Asitavhayassa Sakyā ||
Disvā kumāraṃ sikhim iva pajjalantaṃ
tārāsabhaṃ va nabhasigamaṃ visuddhaṃ |
suriyaṃ tapantaṃ sarada-riv'abbhamuttaṃ
ānandajāto vipulaṃ alatta pītiṃ ||

Mahāvastu, II, p. 38, vv. 52-54:

Svāgatamanurāgataṃ te supto
tāvat priyadarśi kumāro |
drakṣyasi tvaṃ pratibuddhaṃ
vighrahaṃ iva jātārūpasya ||
Pratibuddhaṃ ca kumāraṃ praveṇiyam
aṣṭamaṅgalakṛtāyaṃ |
upanāmayi mātusmā ghanavivarakṛtaṃ va ādityaṃ ||
Drṣtvāna taṃ ṛṣivaro kuṇḍalamiva
pattakambalanyastaṃ |
abhyutthahitva tvaritaṃ amkena
pratīcchati kumāraṃ ||

Lalitavistara, VII, p. 110:

Sādhu svāgatu yācase kilamitaḥ prīto'smi te darśanāt
Eṣo'sau śayitaḥ kumāra varado draṣṭuṃ na śakyo'dhunā |
Sādhu tāva muhūrtamāgama ihā yaddrakṣhyase nirmalaṃ
Candraṃ vā yatha pūrnamāsi vimalaṃ tārāgaṇairmaṇḍitaṃ ||
Yad cāsau pratibuddhaḥ sārathivaraḥ paripūrṇa Candraprabhaḥ
Tadarājā pratigrhya vanhivapuṣaṃ sūryātirekaprabhaṃ |
hantā paśya ṛṣe nṛdevamahitaṃ hemāgravimbopamaṃ
Asito drṣṭa ca tasya tou sucaraṇau cakrāṃkitau śobhanau ||

The metre used in the stanzas cited from the *Vatthugāthā* conforms more to the Rucira than to the Praharsini variety of the Atijagati class. That employed in the stanzas from the *Mahāvastu* must be broadly classed under Paṃkti, while the metre of the *Lalitavistara* gāthās stands midway between the Brhati and Paṃkti classes. The metre of the stanzas from the *Buddhacarita* is obviously an Upajāti variety of Triṣṭhubh. Although the Pali stanzas are in the Atijagati metre and those of the *Buddhacarita* in the Upajāti, in wording, general movement, music, and rhythm, there is a closer resemblance between the *Vatthugāthā* and the *Buddhacarita*.

The Pali lines—

Tato kumāraṃ jalitaṃ iva suvaṇṇaṃ
ukkāmukhe va sukusala-sampahaṭṭhaṃ |
dadallamānaṃ siriyaṃ anomavaṇṇaṃ
.....

were clearly in the background of Aśvaghoṣa's lines.

Buddhacarita, III, 23:

Drṣtvā ca taṃ rājasutaṃ striyastā jājvalyamānaṃ vapuṣā śriyā ca

Ibid., I, 55:

Taṃ Brahmavid Brahmavidam jvalantaṃ Brāhyā śriyā caiva
tapaśśriyā ca.

Upajāti is the metre which is abundantly used by Āsvaghoṣa in his *Buddhacarita*. The monotonous effect of its trochaic cadence in a continuous narrative is sought to be effected by the changes on the possible variations of rhythm. The other metres employed in the two *kāvya*s consist of Anuṣṭubh, Vamśastha, Rucirā, Praharsinī, Vasantatilakā, Śarabhā, Mālinī, Śikharinī, Kusumitalatāvellitā, Sārdūlavikrīḍita and Suvadanā among the Samavṛttas, Viyoginī or Sundarī, Aupacchandāsika, Aparavaktra or Vaitāliya and Puṣpitāgrā among the Ardhasamavṛttas, and Udgatā and Upasthitapracupita among the Viṣamavṛttas. An example of Śālinī is met with in the *Śāriputraprakaraṇa*. Bharata's *Nāṭya-śāstra* is the only other work where we have a description of the metre called Śarabhā. Āsvaghoṣa has skilfully employed Udgatā and Upasthitapracupita among difficult metres. The employment of the Vipulā in the śloka contained in the two *kāvya*s, which fell out of use in classical *kāvya*, keeps the works nearer to the *Great Epic* in which it is common enough. The metre Mandākrāntā does not occur in the *Saundarananda* and in the *Buddhacarita*. Fifteen metres have been used in the *Saundarananda*. Āsvaghoṣa's style is of the Vaidarbha type.¹ It is simple. Āsvaghoṣa is at his best in simple and elegant description. The proportion of Vipulās to Pathyās about 11·7 per cent is much lower than this in the Nala and slightly less, according to Hopkins,² than the general average of the *Mahābhārata*, while it is more than half of the corresponding figure in Kālidāsa's *Raghuvamśa*.³

Āsvaghoṣa's treatment of the legend of Ṛṣi Asita in his *Buddhacarita* takes us beyond the stage in the development of poetry which is represented by the *gāthās* in the Pali *Vatthugāthā*, the *Lalitavistara* and the *Mahāvastu*. The same conclusion is to be drawn from the fully developed character of the prosodical system of *kāvya* in Āsvaghoṣa's poems. The question arises—was such a development of Sanskrit *kāvya*s historically possible in the first century A.D.?

The writing of *kāvya*s in conformation to the definite rules of prosody and canons of *kāvya* poetry in the Kuṣāṇa age is not historically an impossibility. The Junāgarh Rock Inscription of Rudradāman I dated A.D. 150 bears a clear testimony to the development of the science of rhetoric and prosody, and no less that of poetics. It is here for the first time that we have the following account of the proficiency of a ruling prince in these sciences and arts: *Sphuta-laghu-madhura-citra-kānta-śabda-samayodārā-lamkṛta-gadya-padya-kāvya-vidhāna-pravīṇena pramāṇa-mānonmāna-svara-gati-varṇa-sārasatvādibhiḥ parama-lakṣaṇa-vyaṁjanair-upeta-kānta-mūrtinā svayam-adhigata-Mahākṣatrapa-nāmnā*.

The *kāvya-vidhāna* of this dated epigraphic record is the same word as the *kāvya-dharma* of our poet. Here, however, we are not concerned with Indian poets in general but with a Buddhist poet in particular. When precisely was classical Sanskrit adopted by the Buddhists as the vehicle of expression?

Since Professor D. R. Bhandarkar seriously doubted the rise of the Buddhist sects before the reign of Aśoka on the evidence of his Schism Pillar Edict, it is maintained⁴ that the names of the sects appear in the inscriptions that date from the first century B.C. to the second or third century A.D. According to the *Dīpavamśa*,⁵ each sect with its rise changed the original texts, their arrangement, language and interpretation. The

¹ Keith, *Hist. of Sanskrit Literature*, p. 60.

² *Great Epic of India*, pp. 223-24.

³ Johnston, *Acts of the Buddha*, Introduction, p. lxiii ff.

⁴ Barua, *Asoka and His Inscriptions*, Pt. I, Ch. IX.

⁵ Oldenberg Ed., V, vv. 32-50.

language of the *gāthās* in the *Mahāvastu* and the *Lalitavistara* is a kind of mixed Sanskrit, Prakrit with Sanskritic tendency or Sanskrit retaining its Prakrit legacy. According to a Tibetan Buddhist tradition, the text of the *Prātimokṣa-sūtra* was recited in Apabhraṃśa by the Sammitiyas, in Sanskrit by the Sarvāstivādins, in a corrupt (mixed) dialect by the Mahāsaṅghikas and in Pāṣāṇī by the Sthaviras. These are precisely the four languages which find mention in the *Mahāvastu* (p. 64). The bearing of this evidence on the point at issue is still uncertain. The utmost the tradition wants to say is that the Sarvāstivādins preferred to have their scriptural texts in Sanskrit. But the prose portions of both the *Lalitavistara* and the *Mahāvastu*, the former of which was a work of the Sarvāstivādins and the latter that of the Mahāsaṅghikas, go to establish that from a certain date the prevailing tendency of all the Buddhist sects was to Sanskritize the texts from an earlier diction which was allied more or less to Pāli and Prakrit. The evidence of the various inscriptions in which the Buddhist sects are mentioned goes only to show that the official language of India tended, as time went on, to be more and more Sanskritic from an earlier Prakrit stage until it was completely replaced by Sanskrit throughout India in the Gupta age.¹ Such a culmination of the process of linguistic transformation in official documents was undoubtedly reached for the first time in the Junaṅgarh Rock Inscription of Rudradāman I in the middle of the second century A.D. But the Sanskrit praśastis (royal panegyrics) composed by the court poets in the metres and style of kāvyā date from the third or fourth century A.D. This fact must be taken into consideration in discussing the date of the kāvyas of Aśvaghōṣa.

Johnston in his comments on the language and style of Aśvaghōṣa has sought to establish that the rules of Pāṇini, which are generally adhered to, are not sufficient to account for certain peculiar grammatical forms. Aśvaghōṣa's acquaintance with a Dhātupāṭha is rendered possible by the *Buddhacarita*, XI, 70, illustrating nine senses of the root \sqrt{av} :

*Athendravaddivya śaśvadarkarad
guṇairava śreya ihāva gānava |
avāyurāryairava satsutān ava śriyaśca
rājannava dharmamāt-manah ||*

But the *Saundarananda*, verse XII, 10, as piquantly observed by Johnston, 'refers to the threefold use of *asti* as a particle for the past, present and future,' the rule playing a part in the famous Buddhist controversy over the reality of the past and future, but not being found in Pāṇini or the orthodox grammars.²

triṣu kāleṣu sarveṣu nipāto 'stiriva smṛtaḥ

In instances where, as Johnston observes, Pāṇini's rules are not complied with, the odd forms or constructions in Aśvaghōṣa's works have their parallels in the epics, while a few usages are peculiar to Buddhism. There are several examples in Pāli, for instance, of the form of compound typified by Aśvaghōṣa's *udikṣyamāṇarūpa*, cf. Pāli *taramānarūpa*.³ The use of the phrase, *prāg eva* (Pāli *pag eva*), as equivalent to *kim punar* is primarily Buddhist. The expression, *yenāśramas tena*,⁴ conforms to the Pāli idiom, *yena bhagavā tena*. The employment of the enclitics, *me* and *te* as instrumental is frequent in Pāli works and Asoka's inscriptions; it is known as

¹ R. G. Bhandarkar, *JBBRAS*, 1901; Rhys Davids, *Buddhist India*, p. 151.

² *Acts of the Buddha*, Introd., p. lxviii.

³ *Sutta-nipāta* (PTS), 417.

⁴ *Buddhacarita*, VI, 65.

well to the epics but not generally sanctioned in classical Sanskrit. The method of comparison by relatives, e.g. *duḥkham eva viśiṣyate*, is not infrequently met with in the Mahāyāna Sūtras. The use of *asmi* for *aham* may be accounted for by *asmi* in the Pali word *asmimāna*, equivalent to *ahaṃkāra* and *ātmābhimāna*. We may not agree with Johnston in thinking that *pūrvatama*¹ is a mistake for *pūrvatana*, the archaic *purituma* being met with in the *Lalitavistara* gāthās. (Cf. Pali *Purimatara*, *Purimatame*) Like other Buddhist writers, Aśvaghōṣa is addicted to the case-ending *taḥ* in place of the ablative or instrumental, a frequent use of which is with a verb in the sense of knowing or understanding, e.g. *śubhato gacchasi*,² *draṣṭavyam bhūtataḥ*,³ cf. Pali *bhūtaṃ bhūtato*, *abhūtaṃ abhūtato*. His fondness for the cognate accusatives is due to the earlier and epic usages. His kāvyas are rich in verbal forms in which the tenses are normally employed but no distinction is made between the perfect, imperfect and aorist. He often places, for the sake of emphasis, the conjunction *ca* and the interjection *hi* towards the end of a sentence. His works are 'pleasantly free from overgrown compounds' and the compounds used by him are 'never filled out with padding', though some of them are irregular.

In Aśvaghōṣa's vocabulary one may trace with Johnston the Rgvedic use of the word *divja* for *agni*,⁴ and verb *śrī* in the sense of 'emit (heat)',⁵ and the epithet *Aurvaśeṣa* for Vaśiṣṭha.⁶

In connection with the ceremony of measuring out *soma* he makes use of the plain root $\sqrt{mā}$ without compounding with the prefix *vi* or *ud*,⁷ the instances of which occur in the *Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa*. It is again the Brāhmaṇas that may sanction the use of the words *nivarta*⁸ and *vimad*⁹ in the sense of 'grow sober'. The reference to Prajāpati's act of creation by *tapas*¹⁰ points to the same conclusion.

The employment of *prokṣaṇa* and *abhyukṣaṇ* which is indicative of his knowledge of the finer points of ritual goes to prove his indebtedness to the *Śrautasūtras*.

The two stanzas, cited below, betray undoubtedly their historical connection with the two ślokas in the *Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad*:

saśiṣyaḥ kapilaśceha pratibuddha iti smṛtiḥ |
saputraḥ pratibuddhaśca Prajāpatirihocyate ||

B., XII, 21.

Yo yoniṃ yoniṃ adhiṣṭhatyeko viśvāni rūpāni yonīś ca
sarvāḥ |
ṛṣiṃ kapilaṃ sastaṃ agre jñānair bibharti jñāyamānaṃ ca
paśyati ||

Śvetāśvatara, V, 2.

Pravṛtti-duḥkhasya ca tasya loke tṛṣṇādayo doṣagaṇā nimittam |
naiveśvaro na prakṛtirna kālo nāpi svabhāvo na vidhir
yadṛcchā ||

S., XVI, 17.

Kālaḥ svabhāvo niyatir yadṛcchā bhūtāni yoniḥ puruṣa iti
cintyaṃ |
saṃyoga eṣāṃ natvātmabhāvāt ātmāpyaniśaḥ sukha-duḥkha-
hetoḥ ||

Śvetāśvatara, I, 2.

¹ *Buddhacarita*, XIII, 10.

³ *Ibid.*, XIII, 44.

⁶ *Buddhacarita*, IX, 9.

⁸ *Ibid.*, XV, 44.

⁴ *Buddhacarita*, XI, 71.

⁹ *Ibid.*, IX, 30.

² *Saundarananda*, VIII, 48.

⁵ *Saundarananda*, I, 2.

⁷ *Saundarananda*, II, 36.

¹⁰ *Buddhacarita*, II, 51.

One may correctly observe with Johnston that though many of the legends alluded to are to be found in the *Mahābhārata*, they are not quite in the same form. Many of the stories referred to by Āsvaghoṣa are not to be found in the *Mahābhārata*. There must, therefore, have been some other literature dealing with these legends, possibly often in a kāvyā form, which is now lost for ever.¹ The Jātaka representation of certain legends,² probably based on an earlier form of the Great Epic, goes to show that there grew up different legends, obviously in a ballad or kāvyā form, about certain kings, nations, and personages, speaking of their destruction or degradation but accounting for it in different ways.³

Besides many Buddhist technical terms and words peculiar to Buddhism, Āsvaghoṣa freely employs several terms and expressions derived from the terminology of Sāṃkhya-Yoga, Rājadharmā and other Indian sciences of which the source, among others, was the Śāntiparva of the *Mahābhārata*. Such proper names as Saṃkrandana, Lekhaṣabha, Māyā and Ambara, and such ordinary words as *avi*,⁴ *avasanga*, *arthavat*,⁵ *upakara*, *drpti*, and *vallarī*,⁶ all employed in special senses are only to be found in the lexica and not in any previous literature which is now known. The special kāvyā vocabulary which grew richer and richer from the days of Kālidāsa is traceable in Āsvaghoṣa's poems only in their initial stages.⁷

Turning to Āsvaghoṣa's style, we cannot fail to appreciate the difficulty which he created for himself by trying to employ the literary art for purposes so incompatible as those of the story-teller, preacher, poet and scholar. Johnston characteristically observes: 'Āsvaghoṣa is a writer of baffling contrasts, on the one hand the literary artist as story-teller, preacher and poet, on the other the scholar anxious to conform with all the rules and to parade his knowledge. The possession of good qualities implies a liability to the corresponding defects, and among a people who treasured intelligence and learning it is not surprising to find some who lapsed at times, like the Buddhist poet, into pedantry. For if his matter is excellent, his manner is often disconcerting.'⁸ A blend of such contradictions and opposites in Āsvaghoṣa marks out his singular greatness and genius.

The kāvyā poetry as typified by the two works of Āsvaghoṣa follows a method of construction of the verses which is diametrically opposite to that in the Ākhyānas and Epics. In the *Rāmāyaṇa*, for instance, almost the entire composition is in a kind of śloka metre having an even flow without any clear division. In it monotony is sought to be relieved by endless variations of rhythm, and the verses appear only as parts of a whole, and not as units by themselves, while frequent repetitions and recurrences of the stock phrases and the slow movement of the story are made to mitigate the monotony and tension of listening. In the kāvyas of Āsvaghoṣa, on the other hand, each verse is treated as 'a separate unit by itself both grammatically and in its sense and it is constituted of four clearly articulated *pādas*, in which cross reference and similarity of framework serve equally to bind the whole together and to delimit it from the contiguous verses'. Āsvaghoṣa occasionally demonstrates how a verse

¹ Johnston, *Acts of the Buddha*, p. xlvii.

² See allusions in the *Sarabhaṅga J.* (522) and *Samkicca J.* (530).

³ Barua, *The Arthasāstra: A Blend of Old and New in the Bhārata-Kaṇṇudī*, I, pp. 93ff.

⁴ In the sense of 'mountain'.

⁵ Meaning 'man'.

⁶ Meaning 'feather'.

⁷ Cf. such special words as *prasnigḍha*, *pratiyātānā*, *karāla* and *nighna*, Johnston, *op. cit.*, p. lxxix.

⁸ *Ibid.*, *op. cit.*, p. lxxxvii.

can be constructed on an epic basis. Or he takes a common phrase to build round it a complicated pun. The treatment of each verse as a separate unit *per se* might in a sense be regarded as a reversion to the practice of the *Rgveda*. It might historically be due to an older tradition of *kāvya* which developed in the country under the aegis of the ballads or on the lines of the reflective and didactic *gāthās*. Some earlier instances of this may perhaps be found in the *Psalms of the early Buddhist brothers and sisters*, or even in some of the *Jātaka* poems.

This *kāvya* method underwent further development in the classical stage. The principle that each verse is a separate unit asserted itself later. In Kālidāsa we notice an exception in so far as he 'occasionally constructs a verse on parallel or contrasted *pādas*', while ordinarily his rhythm is based on the verse as a whole and not on the individual *pādas*. Later poets enthusiastically followed his practice with the result that a *kāvya* epic came to be little more than a collection of miniature poems loosely strung on the thread of the story.

As a pioneer, Āsvaghoṣa, appears to have faced certain difficulties in building up a poem out of a number of stanzas sharply demarcated from their neighbours. Effective narration was indispensable as an art in his *kāvyas* and as the means of keeping the readers' minds directed to the real issue, especially when he had to convey in the form of poetry a definite message of the religion he ardently professed. The narration of the story was of secondary interest only to the classical writers who had no such mission through poetry beyond the appeal of their art. So the problem to him was—how to maintain the unity vital to his purpose. This he sought apparently to achieve by articulating his poems as clearly as his verse. The procedure adopted led him to (a) calculate with care the proportion of space to be allotted to each episode, and (b) to group together the verses by various devices into units, each dealing with a single topic. The expedients tried were either the simple way of doing this by change of metre, or employing *yamaka* to mark the end of a period, or constructing a whole series of verses on a similar scheme with a refrain or with a parallel set of similes.

The successful handling of comparisons is the main feature of Āsvaghoṣa's technique. For without comparisons (*upamās*) as the main ingredient of rhetoric it is not possible to communicate the emotional content of facts in long narrative poems such as the *Buddhacarita* and the *Saundarananda*. The reader's imagination is sought to be stimulated ordinarily by the employment of what the *Alaṅkārikas* call *vakrokti* or indirect expression in which the incompleteness of the parallel is a powerful aid to suggestiveness. In Āsvaghoṣa's case, the *vakrokti* itself consists of comparison of some kind. He excels other Sanskrit poets in his fondness of similes drawn from a wide range of literature and natural phenomena.¹

Gurner² has collected references from the *Saundarananda* and *Buddhacarita* to establish that the Sanskrit poetry of Āsvaghoṣa is characterized by the psychological interest evinced in many similes employed by him. It is not uncommon for a poet to draw a simile from natural objects for mental experience, from moving water to indecision, for instance. And the reverse process of using the mental experience as the source of the simile is not unknown even to the Sanskrit epic. The frequency, however, with

¹ In this connection it is interesting to read Mrs. Rhys Davids' note on 'Similes from the *Nikāyas*', published in *JPTS*, 1888.

² *The Psychological Simile in Āsvaghoṣa* by C. W. Gurner, *JASB*, N.S., Vol. XXVI, 1930, pp. 175-180; *S.*, IV, v. 42; *B.*, IX, v. 71; *S.*, VIII, v. 5; *S.*, X, v. 42; *S.*, XII, v. 33; *S.*, XIII, v. 5; *S.*, XIII, v. 6; *S.*, XV, v. 66; *S.*, XV, v. 67; *B.*, XIII, v. 61; *B.*, VIII, v. 76.

which it occurs in Āsvaghōṣa gives quite a special note to his kāvya and one may fairly suggest that it is largely through Āsvaghōṣa's influence that this type of simile found a place in later kāvya, including of course that of Kālidāsa.

Gurner draws our attention to a fully developed passage in the use of the psychological simile to describe external action.¹ Āsvaghōṣa has sacrificed his descriptive power to his psychological and didactic interest. This is clear from the account of Buddha's attack by Māra and his army. The simile from impotent passion is introduced primarily for its didactic value on a favourite Buddhist theme. A purely descriptive passage in the *Saundarananda* of animal life in the thickets of the Mountain-side has unexpectedly two illustrations (X, 11 and 14) of a more subtle and less didactic psychological significance. However subtle they may be, similes of this kind from psychology to an observation of nature are handicapped in point of literary satisfaction by their inverse character. The cardinal point in Āsvaghōṣa's psychology, especially in its ethical bearing, lies in that distinction between the self and senses, or between the mind and senses, which is the moral background of kāvya poetry.

It is far from being the case with Āsvaghōṣa that interest in human affection is absorbed entirely by the theme of passion, but the quieter emotional experiences of ordinary friendship present fewer opportunities for the psychological simile. Ingratitude has been mentioned as a simile for desertion of the home. The self-expression in Āsvaghōṣa's poetry gave the introspective thought a place in literary Sanskrit.

The similes of allegorical character are also in the writings of Āsvaghōṣa. The conception of the fire or sea of sorrow, so common in epic literature, has been given a distinctly ethical value by Āsvaghōṣa when he expounds Buddhist doctrine.² For the sea of sorrow compare *Rāmāyaṇa* (II, lix, 27-31) with *Buddhacarita* (I, 75). Other types of similes (e.g. purely picture similes) are also found in the writings of Āsvaghōṣa, e.g. the white-robed maiden asleep with her flute.³ He is nevertheless indebted to the epics for his stock similes and *rūpakas* like the lotus and creeper, sun, moon and the stars, lightning and clouds, etc. The similes from the domain of consciousness and conduct, which Āsvaghōṣa uses so frequently, are also scattered in the *Rāmāyaṇa*.⁴ The obscure grammatical simile in *Saundarananda* (XII, 9, 10) is imitated by Kālidāsa.⁵

According to the Indian works on poetics, the similes or comparisons are either purely verbal without poetic emotion or substantial with poetic emotion. If merely verbal, their appeal lies to the intellect. Āsvaghōṣa's comparisons are not generally adapted to the emotional needs. His grammatical similes are laboured and pedantic. Some of them are far-fetched conceits. Those of the psychological type seem to have an academic aura about them.⁶ Those drawn from ordinary life and are effectively employed for moral or didactic purposes are the similes to which normally a preacher has recourse. The *rūpaka type*, which is commonly met with in the epics but which became obsolete in later ages, is palpably artificial in spite of its majestic eloquence. The simplest comparisons, drawn from nature, are often the best; even where they are used pedantically, they are not lacking in the freshness of observation.

¹ B., XIII, 46-51.

² Vide *Buddhacarita*, IX, 29.

³ *Ibid.*, V, 49.

⁴ Cf. *Rāmāyaṇa*, V, xxviii, 12; V, xxix, 1; VI, lxiii, 3, 6.

⁵ *Raghu.*, XV, 9; C. W. Gurner, *JPASB* (N.S.), Vol. XXIII (1927), pp. 347-67.

⁶ *JASB*, 1930, pp. 175-180.

As for other rhetorical figures, Āsvaghoṣa makes much of distributive phrases where one has the zeugma of one verb with two nouns, or that of one verb with two pairs of nouns, or that of two verbs with one noun, or that of one adjective with two dependent nouns. The distributive compounds occur frequently, and rarely the numerical riddles and Kālidāsa's favourite figure, *arthāntaranyāsa*.

His love of recurring sounds is different in its character from that displayed by the later poets who employ *Yamaka* in all its varieties. Either he employs an ordinary form of *Yamaka* where there is the repetition of two syllables at the end of a *pāda*, or where it approaches rhyme, one has the repetition of the same syllables at the end of a *pāda*, either where a verse is repeated without alteration to enforce a comparison, or where, as in a number of cases, the same syllables are repeated in verse, usually with difference of meaning but not in emphatic positions. In repeating sounds, one of his favourite practices is to take the leading word in a sentence and form a vocative compound using this word as the base, e.g. *niḥsaṃśaya saṃśayo me* (S., XVIII, 8). This turn of speech is reserved almost entirely for the Buddha. His leaning to repetitions of sounds led to experiments in rhyme with their several instances in the *Saundarananda*. This poem affords instances where there is a rhyme inside the *pāda*, those where the rhyme covers two *pādas*, and others where we have rhymes at the end of all the *pādas*. The stanza (S., VIII, 32) in which four out of the six words end with *madā* and two with *pradāh*, the recurrent beat of rhyme is little in accord with the mood of epic poetry.

The classical poets of India differ from Āsvaghoṣa in their sensitiveness to variations of sound and delicate combinations which are a source of never-failing joy. In matching, however, the sense with the sound, some of them have followed a way that is decidedly lacking in subtlety, and sometimes manufactured verses with a limited number of consonants or even only one. The nearest approach to this ingenuous trick is to be found only in a solitary stanza in *Buddhacarita*, XII, 93:—

apārapārasaṃsārapāraṃ prepsurapārayat

Āsvaghoṣa's hold on the intricacies of rhythm is amply attested by his success in the employment of *Upajāti* in long stretches without causing tedium to the reader. His verse is generally melodious, and occasional lines are particularly happy in the collocation of consonants. But he seldom hesitates to subordinate the agreeableness of sound to the display of learning. Sometimes he uses a word such as *ajihladat*, the ill sound of which is disapproved by Bhāmaha.

Āsvaghoṣa also uses words in more meanings than one sometimes in a recondite fashion to baffle the reader. In the ironical application of this method one has a clear anticipation of the way of Indian drama. I-tsing rightly observed that Āsvaghoṣa 'clothes manifold ideas in few words; for, besides this habitual use of words in two or more meanings, every single word almost in his poems is pregnant and should be given its full value in translation'.

In Cowell's estimate, Āsvaghoṣa by his technique was to Kālidāsa what Ennius was to Vergil. Johnston will rather seek Āsvaghoṣa's European analogy in Milton,¹ equally a scholar and equally fond of displaying his learning, who similarly sought to express his religion within the limits of an epic. His insistence on symmetry, his exposure of the framework and his non-functional decoration are characteristic of early work, not of a time

¹ *Buddhacarita*, II, Intro., xcv.

when art excels in the skill of concealing the art. In other words, he is primitive alike in his poetry, religion and philosophy. He reveals himself as a man of artistic temperament and strong passion who is capable of delighting in everything that appeals to the senses but finds no suitable foothold anywhere till he seeks refuge in Buddhism. All his writings are informed by the zeal of the converse. By his intense conviction of the importance of his message he carries away the reader of another faith and alien civilization. The inadequacy of his philosophy is no bar to the persuasiveness of his religious appeal. Admirable is his skill in narration, but the real appeal lies in the spontaneity of his overflowing emotion. There are two sources of this outflow of emotion: (1) his ardent devotion to the person of the Buddha, and (2) his keen sense of the impermanence of all things mundane and the ephemeral character of all ordinary joys of life. Every line of his two poems flows with the urge of his faith, and his religious zeal enlivens the driest passages. The second can account for the passion with which he denounces the ordinary joys of life. This is due not merely to a revulsion of feeling but also to a strong internal conviction of the truth of what he speaks. It is only when he begins to deal with that which lies at the core of his heart, forgetting his learning and his rhetorical and pedantic tricks.

The two sources of poetic emotion, viz. the profound veneration for the person of Buddha and the keen sense of the impermanence of all things and the utter worthlessness of all worldly goods, are in no way peculiar to Aśvaghōṣa. For the same are precisely the sources of the emotion which overflows in the psalms or inspired verses of the early Buddhist brothers and sisters. In Canto XVIII Aśvaghōṣa comes out just as a psalmist when he pays through the mouth of Nanda the following personal tribute to the Master:

Yā dṛṣṭiśalyo hṛdayāvagādhah
prabho bhṛṣaṃ māmatudatsutikṣṇah |
tvadvākyasamdamaśamukhena me
sa samudhṛtaḥ śalyahrteva śalyah || v. 7.

Katham kathābhāvagato'smi yena
chinnah sa niḥsaṃśaya saṃśayo me |
tvacchāsanātsatpathamāgato'smi
sudeśikasyeva pathi pranaṣṭah || v. 8.

Kṣayam gatam janma nirastajanman-
saddharmacaryāmuṣito'smi samyak |
kṛtsnam kṛtam me kṛtakārya kāryam
lokeṣu bhuto'smi na lokadharmā || v. 10.

Thera Vaṅṣisa, for instance, pays a similar tribute to the Buddha in the stanzas cited below:

Cando yathā vigatavalāhake nabhe
virocati vītamalo va bhānumā |
evam pi Aṅgīrasa tvam mahāmuni
atirocasi yasaśa sabbalokaṃ ||

Theragāthā (PTS), v. 1252.

Ayam añjali pacchimo suppanāmito,
mā mohayi jānam anomapañña |
parovaram ariyadhammam viditvā
mā mohayi jānam anomaviriya ||

vārim yathā ghammanighammatatto
 vācābhikaṅkhāmi sutam pavassa |
 yadatthiyaṃ brahmacariyaṃ acāri
 Kappāyano kacci'ssa tam amogham ||

vv. 1272 and 1273.

The influence of an earlier version of Vālmiki's *Rāmāyaṇa* is to be sought, according to Johnston, in language, ideas, similes and other rhetorical figures. The *kāvya*s of Aśvaghōṣa and Vālmiki's *Rāmāyaṇa*, IV, 35. 7, refer in the same way to the story of the disturbance of Viśvāmitra's austerities by the *apsarā*, Ghṛtācī, while in the *Bālakāṇḍa* which is presumably added later to the epic narrates the story in some detail replacing Ghṛtācī by Menakā. The Chinese work called *Fo-pen-hsing-chi-ching* presupposes a text of the *Buddhacarita* in which Menakā, exactly as in the *Bālakāṇḍa* narration, takes the place of Ghṛtācī. An earlier Buddhist poet composed the story of Vessantara and Maddī in verse meaning to substitute it for the inspiring story of Rāma and Sītā, to offer in other words, the canonical *Vessantara Jātaka* as a substitute for the widely popular *Rāmāyaṇa*. As suggested elsewhere¹ the popularity of the most elegant form of the Anuṣṭubh or Śloka metre as developed in this epic led the earlier Buddhist poets to employ the same in such other later Pali canonical works as the *Buddhavaṃsa*, the *Cariyāpīṭaka* and the *Apadāna*.

Here a very important question arises—whether or not there was an earlier form of the *Buddhacarita* composed throughout, like the *Rāmāyaṇa*, in the Anuṣṭubh metre before Aśvaghōṣa changed it into its present form, seeking to produce a *kāvya* chiefly in Upajāti? The cantos in Anuṣṭubh remain closer to the style of the epic and earlier traditional verses, while those in Upajāti and other metres take the *kāvya*s far away from it. Referring again to the allusion to the story of Viśvāmitra and Ghṛtācī, we cannot fail to find that the *Buddhacarita* verse reads almost like that in the *Rāmāyaṇa*, while the corresponding verse in the *Saundarananda* has altogether a different rune about it.

Buddhacarita, IV, 20:

Viśvāmitro maharṣiśca vigādho'pi mahattapāḥ |
 daśavarṣānyaranyastho Ghṛtācyāpsarasā hr̥taḥ ||

Rāmāyaṇa, IV, xxxv, 7:

Ghṛtācyāṃ kila samsakto daśavarṣāṇi Lakṣmaṇa |
 ato'manyata dharmātmā Viśvāmitro mahāmuni ||

Saundarananda, VII, 35:

Brahmarṣibhāvārthamapāsya rājyaṃ bheje vanam yo viṣayeṣva-
 nāsthah |
 sa Gādhijaścāpahr̥to Ghṛtācyā samā daśaikam divasaṃ viveda ||

A similar remodelling of the traditional verses in Anuṣṭubh is traceable in the *Jātakas*, e.g. the *Samkicca*, and the *Sarabhaṅga* as well as in the verses quoted in Kauṭilya's *Arthasāstra* (I, 6).²

Aśvaghōṣa was a master of simple pathos:

mahatyā tṛṣṇanayā duḥkhair garbhenāsmi yayādhr̥taḥ |
 tasyā niṣphalatnāyāḥ kvāhaṃ mātuḥ kva sā mama ||

¹ B. C. Law, *History of Pali Literature*, I, p. 290; Law, *The Minor Anthologies of the Pali Canon (SBB)*, Pt. III, p. 91.

² Barua, *The Arthasāstra: A Blend of Old and New in the Bhārata Kaumudī*, I, pp. 93ff.

Aśvaghōṣa's style became obsolete in the classic period of kāvya, especially after Kālidāsa. The change of taste and the preference of other methods of writing are accountable indeed for the waning of his influence on the poets who flourished after Kālidāsa.¹ The closest and most palpable is the historical relationship between Aśvaghōṣa and Kālidāsa, although in all instances the evidence of direct borrowing is not conclusive. A few typical stanzas cited below from the writings of both may suffice to indicate the form in which Kālidāsa expressed the ideas for which he was indebted to his Buddhist predecessor.²

AŚVAGHOṢA

Tam gauravaṃ Buddhagatam
cakaṛṣa
bhāryānurāgaḥ punarācakaṛṣa |
So'niścayānnāpi yayau na tasthau
taraṃs taraṅgeṣviva rājahamsaḥ ||
(S., IV, 42.)

Buddhacarita—

Sa hi svagātraprabhayaḥ jvalantyā
dīpaprabhāṃ bhāskaravanmu-
moṣa |
mahārhaḥ jāmḇunada cāruvarṇo
vidyotayāmāsa diśaśca sarvāḥ ||
(Canto I, Śl. 32.)

Tasmāt pramāṇam na vayo na kālah
kaścit kvacit śraiṣṭhyam upaiti loka |
rājñām ṛṣiṇāṃ ca hitāni tāni
kṛtāni putrairakṛtāni pūrvaiḥ ||
(Canto I, Śl. 51.)

Mahātmani tvayyupapannametāt
priyātithau tyāgini dharmakāme |
sattvānvayajñānavayo'nurūpā
snigdha yadevaṃ mayi te matiḥ
syāt ||
(Canto I, Śl. 60.)

Śrutvā vacastacca manaśca yuktā
jñātvā nimittaiśca tato'smyupetaḥ |
dīdṛkṣayā Śākyakuladhvajasya
śakradhvajasyeva samucchritasya ||
(Canto I, Śl. 63.)

Vātā vavuh sparśasukhā manojñā
divyāni vāsāmsyavapātayantaḥ |
sūryaḥ sa evābhyadhikam cakāśe
jajvāla saumyārciranīrito'gniḥ ||
(Canto I, Śl. 41.)

KĀLIDĀSA

Mārgācalavyatikarā kuliteva
sindhuh |
śailādhirājatanayā na yayau na
tasthau ||
(Kumāra S., V, 85.)

Ariṣṭasajyām parito viśārīṇā
sujanmana stasya nijena tejasā
niśithadīpāḥ sahasā hatatviṣo
babhūvurālekhyā samarpitā iva.
(Raghuvamśa, Canto III, Śl. 15.)

Tejasām hi na vayah samikṣate
(Raghuvamśa, Canto XI, Śl. 1.)

Sarvvaṃ sakhe tvayyupapanna-
metāt
(Kumārasambhava, Canto III,
Śl. 12.)

Kālidāsa has used the word 'Sakra-
dhvaja' many times in his kāvya.

Diśaḥ prasedurmaruto vavuh
sukhāḥ
pradakṣiṇārccirhaviṛāgnirādade
babhūva sarvvaṃ śubhaśaṃsi
tatksanam
bhavo hi lokābhyudayaḥ tādrśam
(Raghuvamśa, Canto III, Śl. 14.)

¹ Johnston, *op. cit.*, p. lxxix ff.

² *Saundarananda-kāvya*, Bengali Tr. by B. C. Law, Preface (*Anuvādaker kathā*).

Vātāyanebhyastu viniḥsṛtāni
parasparopāsita kuṇḍalāni |
strīṇām virejurmukhapaṅkajāni
saktāni harmyeṣviva paṅkajāni ||
(Canto III, Śl. 19.)

Kācit tāmṛādharoṣṭhena
mukhenāsavagandhinā
vinīśāśvāsa karne'sya
rahasyaṃ śrūyatāmiti
(Canto IV, Śl. 31.)

Muhurmuhurmadavyājā-
śrastanilāṃśukāparā |
ālakṣyarasanaṃ reje
sphuradvidyudiva kṣapā ||
(Canto IV, Śl. 33.)

Sa rājasūnurmr̥garājagāmī
mr̥gājiraṃ tanmr̥gavat pravīṣṭaḥ |
lakṣmīviyukto'pi śarīralakṣmīyā
cakṣūṃṣi sarvāśraminām jahāra ||
(Canto VII, Śl. 2.)

Hatatviṣo'nyāḥ śīthilātma bāhavaḥ
striyo viśādena vicetanā iva |
na cukruśurnāśru jahurna śāśvasu-
rna cetanā ullikhitā iva sthitāḥ ||
(Canto VIII, Śl. 25.)

Ādityapūrvam vipulam kulam te
navam vayo diptamidam vapuśca |
kasmādiyaṃ te matirakrameṇa
bhaikṣāka evābhiratā na rājye ||
(Canto X, Śl. 23.)

Yo hyarthadharmau paripīḍya
kāmaḥ
syāddharmakāmye paribhūya
cārthaḥ |
kāmarthayoścāparamēṇa dharma-
styājyaḥ sa kṛtsno yadi kāṅkṣi-
tārthaḥ ||
(Canto X, Śl. 29.)

Vacanena haranti valgunā
nīsitena praharanti cetasā |
madhu tiṣṭhati vāci yoṣitām
hr̥daye halāhalam mahadviṣam || ¹
(*Saundarananda kāvya*, 8. 35.)

teṣāṃ mukhairāsavagandha-
garbhairiḥ
vyāptantarā sāndrakutūhalānām
vilolanetrabhramarairgavākṣaḥ
sahasrapatrābharaṇā ivāsan
(*Raghuvamśa*, Canto VII, Śl. 11.)

Karne lolah kathayitumabhūd-
ānana sparsalobhāt
(*Uttaramegha*, 40.)

Amum sahasaprahitekṣaṇāni
vyājārdhasamdarśita mekhalāni
nālam vikarttum janitendra
śaṅkam
surāṅganā vibhrama ceṣṭitāni
(*Raghuvamśa*, Canto XIII, Śl. 42.)

Sa nyaṣṭacihnāmapi rājalakṣmīm
tejovīṣeṣānumitām dadhānaḥ
(*Raghuvamśa*, Canto II, Śl. 7.)

Nīśithadīpāḥ sahasā hatatviṣo
babhūvurālekhyā samarpitā iva
(*Raghuvamśa*, Canto III, Śl. 15.)

Ekātapatram jagataḥ prabhutvaṃ
navam vayaḥ kāntamidam
vapuśca |
(*Raghuvamśa*, Canto II, Śl. 47.)

Nadharmmamārtha kāmābhyam
vavādhe na ca tena tau
nārtham kāmēna kāmam vā
so'rthena sadṛśā strīṣu
(*Raghuvamśa*, Canto XVII, Śl. 57.)

madhu tiṣṭhati vāci yoṣitām
hr̥di halāhalam eva kevalam
ata eva nīpiyate 'dharo
hr̥dayam muṣṭibhir eva tādyaṭe
(v. No. 3380, *Subhāṣitāvalī*.)

¹ In Sarga VIII, verse 35, we find that the last two lines are known as part of a verse of Bhartṛhari (I, 82) which in the *Subhāṣitāvalī* (3380) is attributed to Kālidāsa

Pramadānāmagatirna vidyate (8. 44.)	Manorathānām agatir na vidyate (<i>Kumārasaṃbhava</i> , Canto V, Śl. 64.)
. . nanṛtustathānyāḥ . . stana- bhinnahārāḥ (10. 37.)	Cacāla bālā stana-bhinna-valkalā (<i>Kumārasaṃbhava</i> , Canto V, Śl. 84.)
babhūva sa hi saṃvegāḥ śreyasas- tasya vṛddhaye dhāturedhirivākhyāte pathito 'kṣara-cintakāḥ (12. 9.)	dhātoḥ sthāna ivādeśaṃ sugrīvaṃ saṃnyaveśayat (<i>Raghuvamśa</i> , Canto XII, Śl. 58.)
Śruta-mahatā śramaṇena (9. 50.)	Sarasvatī śruta-mahatām mahīya- tām (<i>Abhijñānaśakuntalam</i> , VIII.)
vāteritaḥ pallavatāmraṛāgaḥ puṣpojjvalasrīva karnikārah (18. 5.)	Pracakrame pallavarāgatāmṛā prabhā patāṅgasya muneś ca dhenuh (<i>Raghuvamśa</i> , Canto II, Śl. 15.)
Tataḥ smṛtimadhiṣṭhāya capalāni svabhāvataḥ indriyāṇindriyārthebhyo nivārayi- tumarhasi (13. 30.)	Tasmād yasya mahābaho nigṛhi- tāni sarvaśaḥ indriyāṇindriyārthebhyas tasya prajāḥ pratiṣṭhitā (<i>Bhagavadgītā</i> , 2. 68.)
Viṣayairindriyagrāmo na tṛptim- adhigacchati ajasraṃ pūryamāno'pi samudraḥ salilairiva (13. 40.)	Rāgadveṣavimuktāis tu viṣayān indriyāiścaraṇ ātmavaśyair vidheyātmā prasādaṃ adhigacchati (<i>Bhagavadgītā</i> , 2. 64.)

Besides the examples given above, some verses have been quoted by H. P. Shāstri in the preface to his edition of the *Saundarananda-kāvya* published in 1910. They are as follows:—

Tām sundarīm cenna labheta Nandaḥ
sā vā niṣeveta na taṃ natabhrūḥ |
dvandvaṃ dhruvaṃ tad vikalaṃ na śobhe-
tānyonyahināviva rātri candrau ||
S., IV, 7.

paraspareṇa sprhaṇīya śobhaṃ
na cedidaṃ dvandvamayo jāiṣyat |
asmin dvaye rūpavidhānayatnaḥ
patyuh prajānām vitatho'bhaviṣyat ||

Kumāra S., VII, 66.

and Māgha jointly. Peterson remarks that the verse recurs in the *Pañcatantra* (ed. Hertel, Harvard Oriental Series, I, 145) and also with the beginning *amṛtaṃ vadaneṣu yositam* in the *Kuvalayananda*. Aufrecht's indexes refer to *Subhāṣitamuktāvalī*, XVI, 2, where the reading is nearly as in the *Kuvalayananda*. Bohtlingk cites (*Indische Sprüche*, 4677) *Subhāṣitārṇava*, 17A and a verse, *samukhena vadanti valgunā* (*Ind. Spr.* 7124 = *Pañcatantra*, ed. Kosegarten I, 202-3) in which the two lines are also contained. According to Dr. F. W. Thomas who in his note on the *Saundarananda-kāvya*, VIII, 35 (*JRAS*, 1911, pp. 1125-6) is of opinion that as the first half-verse is plainly original in the passage of the *Saundarananda*, we must substitute for Kālidāsa the name of Aśvaghoṣa and perhaps replace Māgha by somebody else (*kaścī*).

The following table will clearly indicate how Āsvaghoṣa repeated his ideas in his own works. It will also show his indebtedness to earlier Buddhist writings and ideas as well as his influence on other writers:—

Saundarananda kāvya—

Kṛtāgasopī

(II, 24.)

Parāśaraḥ śāpaśarastatharṣiḥ
kālim siṣeve jhaṣagarbhayoniṃ |
Suto'sya yasyāṃ suṣuve mahātmā
Dvaipāyano vedavibhāgakartā ||
(VII, 29.)

Dvaipāyano dharmaparāyanaśca
reme samam kāśiṣu veśyavadhvā |
Yayā hato'bhūccalanūpureṇa pādēna
vidyullatayeve meghaḥ ||
(VII, 30.)

Hā Caitraratha hā vāpi hā
mandākinī hā priye |
Ityārtā vilapanto'pi gām
patanti divaukasah ||
(XI, 50.)

Tasmādyāsasamāsābhyāṃ tanme
vyākhyātumarhasi |
Yacchrutvā śṛṇvatām śreṣṭha
paramaṃ prāpnuyām padam ||
(XII, 17.)

Antarbhūmigataṃ hyambhaḥ
śraddadhāti nara yadā |
Arthitve sati yatnena tadā
khanati gāmimām ||
(XII, 33.)

Karmaṇo hi yathādrṣṭātkāyavāk-
prabhavādapi |
Ājīvaḥ prthagevokto duḥśodhat-
vādayaṃ mayā ||
(XIII, 17.)

Kṛtāgasopī

(Cf. *Buddhacarita*, II, 42.)

Kālim caiva purā kanyāṃ
jalaprabhavasambhavām |
Jagāma yamunātīre
jātarāgaḥ parāśaraḥ ||
(*Buddhacarita*, IV, 76.)

Purā hi kāsīsumdaryā veśavadvā
mahānṛṣiḥ |
Tādito'bhūt padanyāsāddurdharṣo
daivatairapi ||
(*Buddhacarita*, IV, 16.)

Hā Mandākinī hā puṣkirinī hā vāpi
hā Caitraratha hā Pārśyaka
hā Nandanavana hā Misrakāvana
... itī karuṇakarūṇaṃ
paridevase |
(*Divyāvadāna*, p. 194.)

Śṛyatāmayaṃasmākaṃ siddhāṃ-
taḥ śṛṇvatām vara |
Yathā bhavati saṃsāro yathā
vai parivartate ||
(*Buddhacarita*, XII, 16.)

Kāṣṭhaṃ hi mathnan labhate
hutāśaṃ
bhūmiṃ khaṇan vindati cāpi
toyam |
Nirbandhinaḥ kiñcana nāstyā-
sādhyam
nyāyena yuktaṃ ca kṛtaṃ ca
sarvaṃ ||
(*Buddhacarita*, XIII, 60.)

Ājīvo nāma bhijjamāno kāyavaci-
dvāresu yeva bhijjati, manodvāre
ājīvabhedo nāma natthi, pūraya-
māno pi tasmim yeva dvāradvaye
pūṛati, manodvāre ājīvapūranam
nāma natthi. Kāyadvāre pana vi-
tikkamo ājīvaHetuko pi atthi, na
ājīvaHetuko pi tathā vacīdvāre . . .
Yam pi pana ājīvaHetukam catu-
bbidham vacīduccaritam bhāsanti
idaṃ akusalam vacīkammanā nāma,
tato virati pi sammāvācā nāma.

Yaṃ pana ājīvaheṭu nesādama-
cchabandhādayo pāṇaṃ hananti
adinnaṃ ādiyanti micchācaranti
ayaṃ micchā-ājīvo nāma, tato
virati sammā-ājīvo nāma. Yaṃ pi
lañcaṃ gahetvā musā bhaṇanti
pesuññapharusasamphappalāpe
pavattenti ayaṃ pi micchā-ājīvo
nāma, tato virati sammā-ājīvo
nāma.

(*Atthasālinī*, p. 220; cf.

Dhammasaṅgani, p. 64.)

Nāpaneyaṃ tataḥ kiñcitprakṣēpyaṃ
nāpi kiñcana |
draṣṭavyaṃ bhūtato bhūtaṃ
yādṛṣaṃ ca yathā ca yat ||
(XIII, 44.)

Kim pan'ettha paṭhama-pārājike
kiñci apanetabbam vā pakkhipi-
tabbam vā āsi n'asīti? Buddhassa
Bhagavato bhāsīte apanetabbam
nāma n'atthi. Na hi Tathāgatā
ekavyañjanaṃ pi niratthakaṃ
vadanti. Sāvakaṇaṃ pana deva-
tānaṃ vā bhāsīte apanetabbam pi
hoti. Taṃ dhammasaṃgāhaka
therā apanayimsu. Pakkhipi-
tabbam pana sabbatthāpi atthi,
tasmā yaṃ yattha pakkhipitum
yuttaṃ taṃ pi pakkhipimsu yeva.
Kim pana taṃ ti? 'Tena samaye-
nāti' vā, 'Tena kho pana samaye-
nāti' vā.

(*Sumaṅgalavilāsinī*, P.T.S., p. 12.)

Buddhacarita, Canto XI—

Yatnena labdhāḥ parirakṣitāśca ye
vipralabhya pratiyānti bhūyaḥ |
teṣvātmavān yācitakopameṣu
kāmeṣu vidvāniha ko rameta || 22
Anviṣya cādāya ca yātatarṣā yānatya-
jantaḥ pariyānti duḥkhaṃ |
loke tṛṇolkāsadrṣeṣu teṣu kāmeṣu
kasyātmavato ratiḥ syāt || 23
Anātmavanto hr̥di yairvidaṣṭā
vināśamarchaṃti na yānti śarma |
kruddhograsarpapratimeṣu teṣu kāmeṣu
kasyātmavato ratiḥ syāt || 24
Asthi kṣudhārtā iva sārameyā
bhuktāpi
Yānaiva bhavaṃti tṛptāḥ
jīrṇāsthikaṅkālasameṣu teṣu kāmeṣu
kasyātmavato ratiḥ syāt || 25
Ye rājacaurodakapāvakebhyaḥ
sādhāranatvājjanayaṃti duḥkhaṃ |
teṣu prabiddhāmiṣasaṃnibheṣu
kāmeṣu kasyātmavato ratiḥ syāt || 26

Therīgāthā—

Asisūlūpamā kāmā kāmā sappasi-
ropamā |
ukkopamā anudahanti aṭṭhikaṅ-
kālasannibhā || 488
aniccā addhuvā kāmā bahudukkhā
mahāvisā |
ayogulō va santatto aghamūlā
dukkhapphalā || 489
rukkhapphalūpamā kāmā maṃsa-
pesūpamā dukkhā |
supinopamā vañcaniyā kāmā
yācitakūpamā || 490
sattisūlūpamā kāmā rogo gaṇḍo
aghaṃ nighaṃ |
aṅgārakāsusadisā aghamūlaṃ
bhayaṃ vadho || 491

evaṃ bahudukkhā kāmā akkhātā
antarāyikā |
gacchatha na me bhavagate viṣṣāso
atthi attano || 492

(*Āṅguttara Nikāya*, III, page 97.)

Yatra sthitānāmabhito vipattih
śatroḥ sakāśādapi bādhavebhyah |
himsreṣu tesvāyatanopameṣu kāmeṣu
kasyātmavato ratiḥ syāt || 27

Girau vane cāpsu ca sāgare ca
yadbhūmsāmarchamtyabhilaṅgha-
mānāḥ |

teṣu drumaprāgraphalopameṣu
kāmeṣu kasyātmavato ratiḥ
syāt || 28

Yānarcayitvāpi na yāmti śarma
vivardhayitvā paripālayitvā |
aṅgarakarsapratimeṣu teṣu kāmeṣu
kasyātmavato ratiḥ syāt || 29

Tirthaiḥ prayatnairvividhairavāptāḥ
kṣaṇena ye nāsamiha prayāmti |
svapnopabhogapratimeṣu teṣu
kāmeṣu kasyātmavato ratiḥ syāt || 30
Vināśamīyuh kuravo yadarthaṃ
Vṛṣṇāyamdhakā maithila danḍa-
kāśca |

śūlāsikāsthapratimeṣu teṣu kāmeṣu
kasyātmavato ratiḥ syāt || 31

Siṃdopasumdvāsurau yadartha-
manyonyavairaprasūtau vinaṣṭau |
sa hārdaviśeṣakareṣu teṣu kāmeṣu
kasyātmavato ratiḥ syāt || 32

Kāmāmdhasamjñāḥ kṛpāyā va ke ca
kravyāstu nātmānamihot-
srjanti |

sapatnabhūtesvaśiveṣu teṣu kāmeṣu
kasyātmavato ratiḥ syāt || 33

Kāmāmdhasamjñāḥ kṛpaṇaṃ karoti
prāpnoti dukkhaṃ vadhaban-
dhanādi |

Kāmārthamāśākrpaṇastapasvi
mrtyuśramam cārhati jīvaloke || 34

Saundarananda-kavya—

Bhārasvodyavanārthaṃ ca
rathākṣo'bhyajyate yathā |
Bhojanam prānayātrārthaṃ
tadvadvidvānṣevate ||
(XIV, 12.)

Praklehyamadbbhiravadanam
vilokyāḥ sarvato diśah |
Cāryā drṣṭiśca tārāsu
jijāgarīṣuṇā sadā ||
(XIV, 24.)

Appassādā āvuso kāmā vuttā
Bhagavatā, bahudukkhā bahūpā-
yāsā, ādinavo ettha bhīyo. Atthi-
sankhalūpamā kāmā vuttā Bha-
gatā, bahudukkhā bahūpāyāsā,
ādinavo ettha bhīyo. Mamsapesū-
pamā kāmā vuttā Bhagavatā,
bahudukkhā bahūpāyāsā, ādinavo
ettha bhīyo. Tiṇukkūpamā kāmā
vuttā Bhagavatā, bahudukkhā ba-
hūpāyāsā, ādinavo ettha bhīyo.
Aṅgarakāsūpamā kāmā vuttā
Bhagavatā, bahudukkhā bahūpā-
yāsā, ādinavo ettha bhīyo. Supi-
nakūpamā kāmā vuttā Bhagavatā,
bahudukkhā bahūpāyāsā, ādinavo
ettha bhīyo. Yācītakūpamā kāmā
vuttā Bhagavatā, bahudukkhā
bahūpāyāsā, ādinavo ettha bhīyo.
Rukkhaphalūpamā kāmā vuttā
Bhagavatā, bahudukkhā bahūpā-
yāsā, ādinavo ettha bhīyo. Asisū-
nūpamā kāmā vuttā Bhagavatā,
bahūpāyāsā, ādinavo ettha bhīyo.
Sattisūlūpamā kāmā vuttā Bha-
gatā, bahudukkhā bahūpāyāsā,
ādinavo ettha bhīyo.

(Cf. *Majjhima Nikāya*, I, 130, 364.)

. . . yathā vā pana akkhaṃ abbañ-
jeyya yāvad evā bhārassa nittha-
raṇatthāya, yathā vā pana putta-
mamsa-āhāram āhāreyya yāvad eva
kantārassa nittharaṇatthāya; evaṃ
eva bhikkhu patisaṃkhā yoniso
āhāram āhāreti n'eva davāya . . .
(*Mahāniddeśa*, p. 241.)

Addasā kho Bhagavā dibbena
cakkhunā visuddhena atikkanta-
mānusakena āyasmantaṃ Mahā-
moggallānaṃ Magadhesu Kalla-
vālamuttagāme pacalāyamaṇaṃ
nisinnaṃ, disvā, . . . āyasmato

Mahāmoggallānassa pamukhe
pāturahosi . . . Nisajja kho
Bhagavā āyasmantaṃ Mahā-
moggallānaṃ etad avoca, 'paca-
lāyasi no tvam Moggallāna, paca-
lāyasi no tvam Moggallānā' ti?
(*Aṅguttara*, IV, 85.)

Dante'pi dantaṃ prapīdhāya
kāmaṃ tālvagramutpīḍya ca
jihnuyāpi |
Cittena cittaṃ parigṛhya cāpi
kāryaḥ prayatno na tu ne'nuvṛttāḥ ||
(XVI, 83.)

. . . tena bhikkhave bhikkhunā
dantehi dantaṃādhāya jivhāya
tālum āhacca cetasā cittaṃ abhi-
niggaṇhitabbam abhinippīletab-
bam abhisantāpetabbam; tassa
dantehi dantaṃādhāya jivhāya
tālum āhacca cetasā cittaṃ abhi-
niggaṇhato abhinippīlayato abhi-
santāpayato ye pāpakā akusalā
vitakkā chandūpasamhitā pi dosū-
pasamhitā pi mohūpasamhitā pi te
pahiyanti te abbhattham gacchantī.
(*Majjhima Nikāya*, I, pp. 120-
121.)

Atha dvijo vāla ivāptavedaḥ
kṣipraṃ vaṇik prāpta ivāptalā-
bhah |
jitvā ca rājanya ivārisainyaṃ
Nandaḥ kṛtārtho gurumabhya-
gacchat ||

(XVIII, 1.)

Atha Candraprabhā devakanyā
banig iva labdhalābhaḥ samyak-
saṃpanna iva karshakaḥ śura iva
vijitasamgrāmaḥ sarvarogapari-
mukta ivāturo yayā vibhūtyā
Bhagavatsakāśaṃ āgatā . . .
(*Dīvyāvadāna*, p. 555.)

Aśvaghōṣa has also repeated the same Brahmanical allusion in his two
kāvyas:

Saundarananda—

Bheje śvapākīm munirakṣamālām
kāmadvaśiṣṭhaśca sa sadvarīṣṭhaḥ |
Yaśyām Vivasvāniva bhūjalādaḥ
sutaḥ prabhūto'sya Kapiñjalādaḥ ||
(Canto VII, 28.)

Buddhacarita—

Mātāṅgyāmakṣamālāyām
garhitāyām riramsayā |
Kapiñjalādaṃ tanayaṃ
Vasiṣṭho'janayan munih ||
(Canto IV, 77.)

If we read carefully the *Buddhacarita* (Canto XI, vv. 38 and 39) and the *Ratnāvalī* of Nāgārjuna (vv. 46-47 and 49) we may find that Aśvaghōṣa exercises some influence on Nāgārjuna, the author of the *Ratnāvalī*. The *Buddhacarita* has the following passage: 'Nidrāvidhātāya tathaiva sayyā yānaṃ tathādhvaśramanāsanāya¹ which may be compared with the passage 'Sayyā' nnapānāhastyaśvaśṛṅgāṃ' in the *Ratnāvalī* (v. 49). Again Nāgārjuna has borrowed the idea in verses 46-47, of the *Ratnāvalī* from Aśvaghōṣa's *Buddhacarita*. Cf. 'Duḥkhaḥpratikāraṇamittabhūtāstasmātprajānāṃ viśayā na bhogyāḥ' ('Therefore the objects of sense are the means for remedying people's suffering and not enjoyment'—*Buddhacarita*, Canto XI, v. 39) with 'Duḥkhaḥpratikriyāmātraṃ Sarīraṃ Vedanāsukhaṃ' . . . (v. 46) and 'Duḥkhaḥpratikriyāmātraṃ Kalpanāmātraṃ eva ca' . . . (v. 47).²

¹ A bed is for riddance of drowsiness and a carriage is for avoidance of road-fatigue.

² *JRAS*, 1936, p. 249.

CHAPTER IV

ĀSVAGHOṢA THE TEACHER

In the colophon of the three works that are attributed definitely to Āsvaghoṣa, he is eulogized, as we have seen, as 'the great eloquent poet, the mendicant and teacher'. In the preceding chapter we have discussed at length his position as a great pioneer in the writing of Sanskrit *kāvya* and drama. Here it remains to carefully consider his position as a senior Buddhist mendicant and gifted exponent of Buddhism. Although Āsvaghoṣa the mendicant is not separable from Āsvaghoṣa the teacher, the difference between the two lies in the fact that his career as a mendicant is primarily a personal concern, while his success as a teacher has a public interest, for on that depends the inherent strength of the popular appeal of the religion of which he was an ardent devotee and exponent. His life as a mendicant implies only a change of faith, while his rôle as a teacher means an active advocacy of a new faith with the zeal of a convert. Thus his second capacity is the happy culmination of the first. Whatever might have been the Master's apprehension as to the future of the Good Faith due to the sentimental appeal of poetry in general, going by the definition of poetry he adopted, he felt justified to think that Āsvaghoṣa the poet was not incompatible with Āsvaghoṣa the mendicant and teacher. Poetry with its religious appeal developed in Buddhism in spite of the Master's timely warning against its prevalence.

How exactly was his change of faith brought about, particularly through whose instrumentality, we cannot say. The tradition gives the Sthavira Pārśva or a pupil of his the credit for Āsvaghoṣa's conversion to the new faith. If it be assumed that Āsvaghoṣa's life is a progressive one with its three successive stages, all comprehended by the continuous evolution of a single personality—Āsvaghoṣa the man—it cannot fail to be both interesting and instructive to enquire how Āsvaghoṣa being a Brāhmaṇa became a zealous Buddhist to assume at last the responsible rôle of a teacher.

As a mendicant Āsvaghoṣa belonged to a particular Buddhist sect and school of thought. Broadly speaking, he adhered to a school of thought within the definition of the Hinayāna or Lesser Vehicle which aims at the attainment of Arhatship as the final goal of religious effort, and not that of Buddhahood as in the Mahāyāna or Greater Vehicle. As for the sect, it is still an unknown factor. Johnston is inclined to connect him with the Kaukūlikas or their offshoot—the Bahuśrutikas. Even if he were an adherent of the Bahuśrutikas, we have sought to show that it does not mean that the sect to which he belonged was of the Mahāsaṅghika line. The Bahuśrutikas themselves, at least according to the *Mahāvīryaputti*, sprang from the Mūla-Sarvāstivāda sect which stood very close to the Theravāda or Pali Buddhism. Whatever the actual name of the sect, its main line is Sarvāstivāda. Amongst the earlier eighteen sects,¹ the Suttavāda or Sautrāntika was the third offshoot of the Sarvāstivāda. The main legends of the Buddha which Āsvaghoṣa availed himself of in his *kāvyas* were, as we shall see presently, those traceable in the traditions of the

¹ Geiger, *Mahāvamsa*, Ch. 5; B. C. Law, *Debates Commentary* (P.T.S.Tr. Series—English rendering of the *Kathāvatthupakaraṇa-aṭṭhakathā*), Intro., pp. 1-7.

Theravāda, the Sarvāstivāda and the Mahāsaṅghika. As regards the history of the First Council, Aśvaghōṣa has followed a distinct tradition, the tradition undoubtedly of his sect. This differs from others in so far as it makes the Indraśāla Cave connected with the Gṛdhrakūṭa mountain as the venue of the Council instead of the Saptaparnī Cave associated in other traditions with the Vebhāra or Vaihāra hill of Rājagṛha. The point of difference which is historically important is that it speaks only of the rehearsal of the Sūtras by Ānanda and the redaction made of the *Sūtra Piṭaka*, having nothing to say about the recital of the Vinaya by Upāli and the redaction made of the *Vinaya Piṭaka*.¹ The omission is significant. The Prātimokṣa expounded in the *Buddhacarita* is not the Prātimokṣa code of the *Vinaya*; it is the collective name for the guiding moral principles such as those embodied in the *Dhammapada* and other Sutta texts,—the principles which were behind or the ideals which were before the Vinaya discipline.² In other words, the Prātimokṣa in the *Buddhacarita* was in both matter and form the Prātimokṣa principles that are said to have been inculcated by the Buddha in the *Mahāpadāna Suttanta*.³ The *Mahāvastu* presenting a legendary life of the Buddha is introduced as the *ādi* or beginning of the *Vinaya Piṭaka* of the Lokottara branch of the Mahāsaṅghikas.⁴ Here by the word *ādi* is really meant the *nidāna* or historical introduction to the Lokottaravāda Vinaya. There is a similar historical introduction to the *Vinaya Piṭaka* of the Theravāda as well as the Sarvāstivāda. This does not mean, therefore, that the Lokottaravāda sect dispensed with the *Vinaya Piṭaka*.

According to Vasumitra, the Sarvāstivāda interpretation of Buddhism centred round the four Noble Truths.⁵ The same holds true alike of Theravāda.⁶ The four Truths equally form the main burden of Aśvaghōṣa's interpretation of Buddhism. Disease, decay, and death are the unavoidable accidents of individual life which has its beginning in birth. These contingencies are made the main and only argument by prince Siddhārtha in favour of the life of renunciation which he was led to adopt. Aśvaghōṣa is not tired of repeating it and constantly dinning it into our ears. The finding of the sure way of escape from the above contingencies is said to have been the only aim of the ascetic life of Siddhārtha. There were otherwise no other causes of unhappiness from a worldly man's point of view which impelled him to leave the world. The Discourses of the Buddha on which Aśvaghōṣa's knowledge of Buddhism was based are full of such painful reflections. So far as the phenomenal side of individual life is concerned, the contingencies mentioned above formed the main crux in all forms of asceticism. There was no new reading of them as facts in Buddhism. Aśvaghōṣa's dilatation on the subject cannot but remind us of the reflections in the Maitrāyaṇa Brāhmaṇa Upaniṣad,⁷ the two Sanskrit epics, the Jātakas, and other Buddhist Canonical texts. The points were equally stressed in Sāṃkhya as known to and represented by Aśvaghōṣa, particularly in his *Buddhacarita*.⁸ The case made out for Buddhism is

¹ Beal, *Fo-sho-hing-tsan-king*, Ch. 28, p. 335.

² *Ibid.*, Ch. 25, p. 296ff.

³ *Digha*, II, p. 49: *Pātimokkham uddisati*.

⁴ Senart, *Mahāvastu*, I, p. 2—*āryamahāsāṃghikānāṃ lokottaravādināṃ madhya-deśikānāṃ pāṭhena Vinayapiṭakasya mahāvastuye ādi*.

⁵ *Journal of the Department of Letters*, Calcutta University, Vol. I—Masuda's Article.

⁶ *Peṭakopadesa*, Chap. I—*na kiñci buddhānaṃ bhagavantiānaṃ dhammadesanāya Dhammacakkato bahiddhā; tassa sabbaṃ suttāṃ ariyadhammesu pariyesitabbaṃ*.

⁷ I, 4.

⁸ Book XII, vv. 14 foll.

that none among the Indian teachers before the Buddha could find and point out the sure way of escape from the ills attendant on existence. Thus it is the certitude of the way of escape or deliverance that distinguished his new faith from Arāḍa's Sāṃkhya-Yoga method and Rudrarāma's Yogic method. The weak point in all the contemporary and previous systems lay in the inadequacy and dubiousness of the paths prescribed. The Buddha's way of escape suggested, however, a far superior way of truth as well as a far better way of life. The historical or the philosophico-ethical position of Buddhism thus made out by Āsvaghoṣa was fundamentally the same as that represented in the body of the *Sūtra Piṭaka* which served as the only Buddhist scriptural authority for him.

The ills of life needed a satisfactory explanation and the ethical principles required a sound philosophic foundation. The needed explanation did not lie in the theory of creation by God, or by nature, or by fate, or by caprice. In the soul theory was not to be found the sound philosophic foundation of rational ethics. The satisfactory explanation lay in the Buddha's *pratītya-samutpāda* or law of causation¹ and in it alone could be laid a sound philosophic foundation of ethics and morality. Here, too, Āsvaghoṣa's presentation of Buddhism is in complete agreement with the trend of the Buddha's teachings in the *Sūtra Piṭaka*. The same observation applies equally to his interpretation of *nirodha* meaning the complete cessation of the ills attendant on life² and the Noble Eightfold Path pointing to the sure way leading thereto.³ His description of *nirvāṇa* of which the essence is tranquillity (*śānti*) is similarly based upon the Sūtra texts. The wiles and guiles by which women entice men, captivate their hearts and keep them enchained in the prison of lust, are precisely those which are described in the Jātakas and other Sūtra works. His ideal king, ideal city, ideal state, ideal government, ideal home, father, mother, brother, wife, son and other relations, ideal religious order, ideal men and ideal religious life are at once epic, traditional, and Buddhistic. Similarly his description of the three Refuges, the *Tathāgata* as the most perfect type of man and human and divine character, the *Dharma* as the best of norms ever propounded by any person in history, the personnel of the ideal *Sanḡha* as stalwarts among the disciples and followers of a great teacher and the persons endowed with wisdom, vision, character and spirituality is all in keeping with the Sūtra tradition. *Śraddhā* (faith), *vīrya* (energy) and other moral faculties, the immoral mental states with their unwholesome effects and creating fetters and hindrances are all interpreted by him in consistency with the Sūtra line of development of these psycho-ethical concepts. This very remark holds equally valid in the case of Māra⁴ as depicted by him. His Brahmanical learning and heritage, his wide knowledge of the epics and popular legends, his own keen observation of human affairs and natural conditions enabled him to bring out the importance, unfold the significance, and present the beauty, attractiveness and poetic appeal of the religious themes that lay nearest to his heart. But even here, in all these matters, he followed the time-honoured Sūtra tradition of Buddha's teachings.

¹ Cf. B. C. Law, *Formulation of Pratītyasamutpāda*, *JRAS*, April, 1937; E. J. Thomas, *History of Buddhist Thought*, Chap. V; B. M. Barua, *Pratītyasamutpāda as basic concept of Buddhist Thought*, *B. C. Law Volume*, Pt. I, pp. 574ff.

² Cf. E. J. Thomas, *History of Buddhist Thought*, p. 43; B. C. Law, *Concepts of Buddhism*, pp. 28-29.

³ *Ibid.*, p. 13.

⁴ For a clear conception of Māra based on Hinayāna literature, see B. C. Law, *Buddhist Studies*, pp. 257ff.

The literary art employed by Aśvaghōṣa in his *Saundarananda-kāvya* in presenting the subject of salvation through the poetical discourses is evidently the same as followed in the *Bhagavadgītā*. The same is the case with the Kārikā form of the *Laṅkāvatāra Sūtra*. One may maintain alike that this very art has been extensively used in the *Milinda-Pañho*. This art was being developed in India through such Upaniṣads as the Kāṭha and such Pali Dialogues as the Sāmaññaphala and Sakkapañña Suttas. The distinctive trait of the art as employed in the *Bhagavadgītā* and the *Saundarananda-kāvya* is that here the dialogues are represented as those which took place between the *guru* (teacher) and the *śiṣya* (disciple).¹ The art consists in creating a historico-psychological or dramatic situation in order to excite curiosity in the reader's mind to watch with rapt attention the course of events, the trend of the serious conversation, and to keep up the reader's or hearer's interest until the happy end of the drama is seen or known. Here the *śiṣya* is just another word for the *bhakta*, devotee or votary.²

In the *Gurugītā*, the Guru is defined as the Master who opens the eye of the disciple blinded by the darkness of ignorance with the probe and soothing balm of knowledge and by whom the way of salvation is pointed out.

This very definition of the Guru looms large in the following stanza addressed by the Buddha to Nanda:³

Unmilitasyāpi janasya madhye
nimilitasyāpi tathaiva cakṣuḥ |
prajñāmayam yasya hi nāsti cakṣuḥ-
cakṣur na tasyāsti sacakṣuṣo'pi ||

'Similarly a man's eyes may be closed and yet he alone has sight among people, though their eyes are open; for though a man has eyes, yet he has not sight, unless he has the eye of intuitive wisdom.'

S., XVIII, 39-41.

staveṣu nindāsu ca nirvyapekṣaḥ
kṛtāñjalirvākyamuvāca Nandaḥ ||
Aho viśeṣeṇa viśeṣadarśistvayānukampā
mayi darsīteyam |
yat kāmapañke Bhagavannimagnas-
trāto 'smi samsārabhayādakāmaḥ ||
Bhrātrā tvayā śreyasi daiśikena
pitṛā phalasthena tathaiva mātṛā |
hato' bhaviṣyam yadi na vyamokṣam
sārthāt paribhraṣṭa ivākṛtārthaḥ ||

Bh., XI, 14.

Tataḥ sa vismayāviṣṭo hr̥ṣṭaromā Dhanañjayah |
praṇamya śirasā devam kṛtāñjalirabhāṣata ||

Ib., XI, 44.

Tasmāt praṇamya pranidhāya kāyam
prasādaye tvāmahamīsamīdyaḥ |
piteva putrasya sakheva sakhyuḥ
priyaḥ priyāyārhasi deva soḍhum ||

¹ *Saundarananda*, XVIII, 20, 22.

² *Ibid.*, XVIII, 53.

³ *Ibid.*, XVIII, 36.

S., XVIII, 22.

Uttiṣṭha dharme sthita śiṣyajuṣṭe
kiṃ pādayorme patito'si mūrdhnā |
abhyarcanaṃ me na tathā praṇāmo
dharme yathaiśā pratipattireva ||

Ib., XVIII, 1.

jītvā ca rājanya ivārisainyaṃ
Nandaḥ kṛtārtho gurumabhyagacchat ||

Bh., XI, 33.

Tasmātvamuttiṣṭha, yaśo labhasva,
jītvā śātrūn bhuṅkṣva rājyaṃ samṛddhaṃ |

For such expressions as *karmayoga* (S., XVII, 19), *abhyāsayoga* (S., XVI, 20) and *indriyāṇāṃ indriyārthebhyo* (S., XIII, 30) Āsvaghoṣa was certainly indebted to the *Bhagavadgītā*. The following account given by Āsvaghoṣa of the practice of *dhyāna* or *yoga* in the *Saundarananda-kāvya* is nothing but a replica of Vāsudeva's account of the *abhyāsayoga* in the *Bhagavadgītā*.

S., XIV, 1-9.

Atha smṛti-kavātena pidhāyendriyasamvaram |
bhojane bhava mātṛājño dhyānāyānamayāya ca ||
Prāṇāpānau nigrhṇāti glāninidre prayacchati |
kṛto hyatyarthamāhāro viḥanti ca parākramaṃ ||
Yathā cātyarthamāhāraḥ kṛto'narthāya kalpate |
upayuktastathātyalpo na sāmārthyāya kalpate ||
Ācāyaṃ dyutimutsāhaṃ prayogaṃ balameva ca |
bhojanaṃ kṛtamatyalpaṃ śarīrasyāpakarṣati ||
Yathā bhāreṇa namate laghunonnamate tulā |
samā tiṣṭhati yuktena bhojyeneyaṃ tathā tanuḥ ||
Tasmādabhyavahartavyaṃ svasaktimanupaśyātā |
nātimātraṃ na cātyalpaṃ meyaṃ mānavasādapi ||
Atyākṛānto hi kāyāgnir guruṇānnena sāmyati |
avacchanna ivālpō'gniḥ sahasā mahatendhasā ||
Atyantamapi samhāro nāhārasya praśasyate |
anāhāro hi nirvāti nirindhana ivānalaḥ ||
Yasmānnāsti vināhārāt sarvaprāṇabhṛtāṃ sthitiḥ |
tasmādduṣyati nāhāro vikalpo'tra tu vāryate ||

Bh., VI, 16-17.

Nātyaśnatas tu yogo'sti na caikāntamanaśnataḥ |
na cātisvapnaśīlasya jāgrato naiva cārjuna ||
Yuktāhāravihārasya yuktaceṣṭasya karmasu |
yuktasvapnāvabodhasya yogo bhavati duḥkhahā ||

Such instances of indebtedness of Āsvaghoṣa to the *Bhagavadgītā* and similar other works do not, however, mean that he has presented through his kāvyas any other doctrine or method of salvation than what he found or believed to be consistent with Buddhism. The *upaniṣad* (doctrine and method) elucidated and advocated by him is the *upaniṣad* of the Buddha: ¹

Mokṣasyopaniṣatsaumya vairāgyamiti grhyatām |
vairāgyasyāpi samvedaḥ, samvido jñānadarśanaṃ ||
Jñānasyopaniṣaccaiva samādhirūpadhāryatām |
samādhherapyopaniṣatsukhaṃ śarīramānaṣaṃ ||

¹ Barua, *Ceylon Lectures*, pp. 241ff.

Praśraddhiḥ kāyamanasaḥ sukhasyopaniṣatparā |
 praśraddherapyupaniṣatprītirapyavagamyatām ||
 Tathā prīterupaniṣatprāmodyaṃ paramaṃ matam |
 prāmodyasyāpyahr̥llekhaḥ kukr̥teṣvakr̥teṣu vā ||
 Ahr̥llekhasya manasaḥ śīlaṃ tūpaniṣacchuci |
 ataḥ śīlaṃ nayatyagryaṃ iti śīlaṃ viśodhaya ||

S., XIII, 22-26. ¹

The popular and institutional religions, based more or less on devotion (*bhakti*), needed the conception of a Deity or perfect type of personality,—the Divine being in a human form (*Puruṣottama*). This very idea in the name of *Agrapudgala* was shaping itself through the *Nikāyas* and the *Jātakas*, and naturally the Buddha was held out as the *Agrapudgala* or *Puruṣottama*. ² Whilst the *Great Epic* held out Kṛṣṇa Vāsudeva as the *Puruṣottama* and the *Rāmāyaṇa* Rāma Dāśarathī, Aśvaghōṣa made use of his two *kāvya*s to establish that Buddha Gautama was the needed *Puruṣottama* for the salvation of suffering humanity. The *Guruvāda*, too, was the basic idea of *Hīnayāna* standing as it did for the ideal of discipleship, and not for that of perfect Buddhahood. Johnston rightly observes ³ that Aśvaghōṣa 'divides (S., V, 16ff.) religious aspirants into two classes, those who obtain salvation of themselves by virtue of the *hetu* working within them, and those who can only act in reliance on others (*parapratyaya*); the Buddha is an instance of the former category (B., II, 56), Nanda of the latter'. ⁴

The *Buddhacarita* is accordingly devoted to the life of the Buddha, the *Puruṣottama* and Guru, and the *Saundarananda* to that of Nanda, the disciple and Arahāt, and, one may reasonably suggest, of Aśvaghōṣa himself in the rôle of Nanda.

If, as emphatically maintained by Waterhouse, the function of religion consists not only in creating the ideals of life but in generating and glorifying faith in their reality as well, the same is equally the function of the religious poetry as developed by Aśvaghōṣa in his two *kāvya*s and by Vyāsa and Vālmīki in the two Sanskrit epics. The country, the kingdom, the people, the city, and the rest associated with the life and acts of the best of men assume an ideal character, and we are to see how far our poet succeeded in creating such ideals and by what means at his disposal. As for the means it is easy to anticipate that these were three in all: (1) the progressive ideas in the collective Indo-Aryan tradition, (2) the changes brought about in them by the teaching of the Buddha, and (3) the personal conviction and power of description of the poet himself.

¹ Cf. *Vinaya*, V, p. 164:

Vinayo saṃvaratthāya, saṃvaro avipphaṭṭisāratthāya, avipphaṭṭisāro pāmujjatthāya, pāmujjaṃ pītatthāya, pīti passaddhatthāya, passaddhi sukhathāya, yathābhūtaṃ nānādaṣṣanaṃ nibbidatthāya, nibbidā virāgatthāya, virāgo vimuttatthāya, vimutti vimuttiṇānādaṣṣanatthāya, vimutti-ñādaṣṣanaṃ anupādāpari-nibbānatthāya.

² *Saddhammopāyana*, 92, 558; *Āṅguttara*, V, 16, 325ff.; *Suttanipāta*, 544, *Dhammapada*, 78; *Dhammapada-aṭṭhakathā*, II, 188.

³ *The Buddhacarita*, introd., p. xxxiv.

⁴ *Saundarananda*, V, 16-18.

Samkleśapakṣo dvividhaśca dṛṣṭastathā
 dvikalpo vyavadānapakṣaḥ |
 ātmāśrayo hetubalādhikasya bāhyāśrayaḥ
 pratyayagauravasya ||
 Ayatnato hetubalādhikastu nirmucyate
 ghaṭṭitamātra eva |
 yatnena tu pratyayaneyabuddhirvimokṣamāpnoti parāśrayeṇa ||
 Nandaḥ sa ca pratyayaneyacetā yaṃ śīriye tanmayatāmavāpa |

To the Buddhists in general, the best of the four continents was Jambudvīpa, the best for the reason that all the Buddhas are born here, and not in any other continent.¹ The Buddhist emperor Asoka claimed that he succeeded in creating a sphere of his moral influence in the whole of Jambudvīpa.² Similarly the *Great Epic* and the *Purāṇas* seek to establish the imperium, political and cultural, over all the countries in the known portion of the earth.³ Aśvaghōṣa accepts and states the Buddhist tradition regarding the continent of Jambudvīpa without comment.⁴

The general Buddhist tradition narrows down the continent by singling out the Middle Country (*Madhyadeśa*) as the central region in Northern India which is destined to be hallowed by the birth of the Buddhas.⁵ With Baudhāyana and Vasiṣṭha among the Smṛiti-writers the Indo-Aryan customs and usages of the Aryandom alias Middle Country were the standard of approved conduct, whereas with Manu the ideal land was the Brahmarṣi-deśa included in the Buddhist Midland. The Middle Country corresponding to Baudhāyana's Aryandom has received only incidentally the following word of praise from Aśvaghōṣa's powerful pen:

Tayoḥ satputrayormadhye Śākyarājo rarāja saḥ |
Madhyadeśa iva vyakto Himavat-Pāripātrayoḥ ||

S., II. 62.

'The king of the Śākyas shone between those two good sons of his (Śuddhodana's) like the Middle Country displayed between the Himalayas and the Pāripātra.'

So far as the advent of Buddha Gautama is concerned, the ideal kingdom for the Buddhists is the Śākya territory with Kapilavastu as its ideal city or capital, precisely as in the description of Vālmiki the ideal kingdom was Kośala with Ayodhyā as its ideal chief city. In both the kingdoms the ruling family was represented by the descendants of king Ikṣvāku of the Solar race of warriors:⁶

Ikṣvākuvaṁśyāste bhuvi Śākyā iti smṛtāḥ

S., I. 24.

Although Aśvaghōṣa relies on the current Buddhist tradition about the origin of the Śākyas and the foundation of a new territory and its capital Kapilavastu, he is careful not to offend the refined taste of the Indo-Aryan society of his time by avoiding the reference to the brother and sister marriage which is naively mentioned in the earlier Buddhist tradition in the *Nikāyas*.⁷

Sundarī, the wife of Nanda, too, is not purposely described as his uterine sister.⁸ Vālmiki, who was the ideal poet with Aśvaghōṣa among his predecessors, skilfully avoided the popular tradition of Rāma's marriage with his sister Sītā as recorded in the *Dasaratha Jātaka*⁹ by giving Sītā

¹ *Jātaka*, I, p. 49—Tato dīpaṃ vilokento saparivāre cattāro dīpe oloketvā, tisu dīpesu Buddhā na nibbatanti, Jambudīpe yeva nibbatanti dīpaṃ passi. Cf. *Lalitavistara* (Lefmann), p. 19.

² Barua, *Asoka and his Inscriptions*, I, pp. 106ff.

³ B. C. Law, *India as described in early texts of Buddhism and Jainism*, pp. 8 foll.

⁴ Beal, *Fo-sho-hing-tsan-king*, XX, 1674-75, p. 241.

⁵ *Jātaka*, I, 49; *Lalitavistara*, (Lefmann), p. 19.

⁶ *Dīgha*, I, p. 87; cf. *Sumaṅgalavilāsinī*, I, 239.

⁷ *Dīgha*, I, pp. 87 foll.—Ambattha Sutta; cf. *Sumaṅgalavilāsinī*, I, pp. 258-260; Paramatthajotikā on the *Khuddakapāṭha* (PTS), pp. 158-160.

⁸ *Therīgāthā* (PTS), 155-156; *Therīgāthā Commentary*, pp. 80ff.; *Manorathapūraṇī*, pp. 217-218.

⁹ *Jāt.* (Fausbøll), IV, pp. 123 foll.

a mysterious origin in *sītā* or the furrow of a land and representing her as a foster-child of king Janaka of Videha.

Kapilavastu became the native land (*jātibhūmi*) as much to the Śākyaas as the ruling race as to the Śākyaas as Buddhists.¹ Āsvaghoṣa made it to appear as the ideal Indian city vying in its glory with Vālmiki's Ayodhyā. In some respects it is expressly made to compare with Girivraja, the hill-girt city of Magadha. The implied comparison of the city is really with the Alakā of Kubera and the heavenly city of the Thousand-eyed Indra. One great advantage of its position was that it was located in a valley of the Himalayas.² It derived its religious sanctity and historical importance from the fact that, like Kākandī, Mākandī and Kauśāmbī,³ it was built on the holy site of the hermitage of a renowned sage like Kapila. Here Āsvaghoṣa faithfully followed and took full advantage of the Buddhist tradition, which adds also the name of Śrāvastī to the list of such cities.⁴

For the description of the ideal city of Kapilavastu we need not make Āsvaghoṣa particularly indebted to Vālmiki's account of Ayodhyā. It is in substance as well as in detail the traditional description of an Indian city which was to be depicted as well laid, populous and prosperous. But nearer Āsvaghoṣa's time we find the magniloquent prose description in the *Milinda* of the Yona city of Sāgala (Śākala), and the more so, of the purely ideal city of Dhammanagara.⁵

To increase the importance of Kapilavastu, the poet was bound to raise also the importance of Kapila the sage and his hermitage. The elaborate description of Kapila and his hermitage is not to be found in the Pali *Sutta Pitaka*. The same remark holds true of his description of the internal life of the hermitage of Bhārgava. Even for such descriptions of the best of hermitages Āsvaghoṣa need not wholly be suspected of conscious or unconscious borrowings from the Aranyakāṇḍa of the *Rāmāyaṇa*, it being easy to find a prototype of these in the legend of Sāriputta in the Pali book of *Apadāna*.⁶

One thing is certain, namely, that in Āsvaghoṣa's description, whether of Kapila's hermitage or of Kapilavastu the city, there is a greater Brahmanical colouring and much less of making it a substitute for the Buddhist ideal; there is hardly any jarring note or tendency to fault-finding. For example, in connection with the Śākya princes who founded the city of Kapilavastu, Āsvaghoṣa says:

Samājairutsavairdāyairi kriyāvidhībhireva ca |
alam cakruralam vīryāste jagaddhāma tatpuram ||

(S., I, 55.)

'Those heroes adorned that city, the wonder of the world,⁷ with assemblies, feasts, gifts and religious ceremonies.'

¹ *Majjhima*, I, 145; *Ang.*, III, 366.

² S., I, 5: *pārve Himavataḥ*; I, 43: *kukeṣu Himagireḥ*.

³ S., I, 57-58:

Kapilasya ca tasyarṣestasminnāśramavāstuni |
Yasmāte tatpuram cakruḥ, tasmāt kapilavāstu tat ||
Kakandasya Makandasya, Kuśāmbasyeva cāśrame |
puryo yathā hi śrūyante tathāiva Kapilasya tat ||

⁴ *Paramatthajotikā*, I, p. 110; cf. II, Pt. I, p. 300: Sāvattthī Sāvattthassa isino nivāsanatthānabhūtā nagari yathā Kākandī Mākandīti. B. C. Law, *Śrāvastī in Indian Literature*, p. 6; D. P. Guha (*IC*, X, 167) is not justified in constructing the Pali statement as meaning that Kākandī is another name of Mākandī.

⁵ *Milinda-Pañho* (Trenckner's Ed.), pp. 1 foll. and 332.

⁶ *Apadāna* (P.T.S.), Pt. I, pp. 15ff.

⁷ The word *jagaddhāma* is not so much 'the wonder of the world' as 'the epitome of the world'. Cf. *gāme sampindite viya* in Buddhadatta's account of Kāveripattana. Buddhadatta's *Manuale*, Pt. I, Introduction, p. xv.

By his learning and wisdom, knowledge of the Vedas and various sciences, association with the aged and experienced persons, royal descent and noble heritage, many bright personal qualities and rare virtues, heroism and other warrior-like gifts, moral fortitude and benevolence, wise rule and able administration, sovereignty and foresight, devotion to religious duties and love of his subjects, Śuddhodana is made to figure as the ideal king of Āsvaghōṣa. He is apt to appear at first sight as the Buddhist compeer of Vālmiki's Daśaratha without the latter's drawbacks. The Hindu poet's *Rāma-rājya* without its blemishes may be seen in the happy state of things which is said to have prevailed in the Śākya territory since the birth of Siddhārtha or Sarvārthasiddha.¹ The ideal king of Āsvaghōṣa is substantially the ideal king pictured in the Rājadharmā section of the Śāntiparva of the *Great Epic*, and no less in the Kauṭīliya *Arthasāstra*. Śuddhodana is a typical Hindu king who viewed his subjects like his own sons:

svābhyah prajābhyo hi yathā
tathaiva sarvaprajābhyah śivamāśaśamse || (B., II, 35.)

He is not a Buddhist king in so far as his heavenly prototype is Śakra, the Thousand-eyed king of the gods, and Śakra's wife, Śacī, is the heavenly prototype of his queen Māyā.² The conjugal life of a prince and his wife is pictured in the light of the conjugal life of Śakra and Śacī:

sārdham tayā Śākyanarendravadhvā
Śācyā sahasrākṣa ivābhireme | (B., II, 27.)

He is not a Buddhist king in so far as 'he drank *soma* according to the ritual and continually repeated the Vedas and observed the law laid down in them,'³ 'benignly at the due time with the due ceremony he caused his priests to measure out the *soma*',⁴ or 'caused the sacrificial ground to be laid out and by his protection he enabled the Brāhmanas to meditate without impediment on the Absolute'.⁵ In other respects he is the ideal pre-Buddhist Indo-Aryan king as depicted in several *Jātakas*. The Cakravartī ideal of righteous rule as propounded by the Buddha does not figure very prominently,⁶ although it seems very likely that the *rājadharmas* (royal duties) which he mentions are the ten essential duties of a righteous ruler (*daśa rājadharmā*) according to the Buddha.⁷ The moral qualities of *dhr̥ti* (endurance) and *satya-pratijñā* (adherence at all costs to the word given) are taken by all schools of political thought to be the outstanding qualities of a good king. But Āsvaghōṣa's statement, *dhr̥tyāvākṣit pratijñāṃ sa*⁸ cannot but remind us of Aśoka's utterance: *dhr̥ti paṭimñā ca mamā ajalā (acalā)*.⁹ The conduct of king as a *r̥ṣi* or seer (*rājār̥ṣi vṛtta*) praised by the Buddhist poet¹⁰ was equally a common Indo-Aryan ideal. The

¹ B., II, 1-19; S., III, 28ff.

² *Buddhacarita*, Johnston's tr., I, 2; *Fo-sho-hing-tsan-king* (Beal's tr.), I, 4.

³ S., II, 44: *Tenāpāyī yathākalpaṃ somaśca yaśa eva ca |*
Vedāścāmnāpi satataṃ Vedokto dharma eva ca ||

⁴ *Ibid.*, 36: *Gurubhirvidhivat kālē saumyaḥ somamamīmāpat |*

⁵ *Ibid.*, 35: *Āsrāntaḥ samaye yajvā yajñabhūmimamīmāpat |*
pālanācca dvijān Brahma nirudvignānamimāpat ||

⁶ *Ibid.*, 32: *Cakravartīva ca parāndharmāyābhyudasiśahat ||*

Cf. *Cakkavartī-sihanāda-Sutta*, *Lakkhaṇa Sutta* in *Dīgha*, III.

⁷ *Ibid.*, 31: *rājadharmasthūtatvāt.*

⁸ *Ibid.*, 13.

⁹ *SRE*, II.

¹⁰ S., II, 29.

pride of belonging to a family of royal seers (*rājarṣi-kula*) is prominent in the following description of Śuddhodana:

Kulaṃ rājarṣivṛttena yaśogandhamavivapat ||¹

In the Kauṭīliya *Arthaśāstra* (I, 9), the person fit for appointment as councillor or officer (*amātyas*) is expected to be endowed with the qualities of friendliness and firm devotion (*maitro dṛḍhabhaktiḥ*). This is echoed in the following qualities with which Aśvaghōṣa endows his ideal king: *sauhārda-dṛḍhabhaktitvān maitreṣu*,² 'friendship and firm devotion to allies'.³ As a parallel to Aśvaghōṣa's description according to which the ideal king is to carry on the administration of the kingdom as a solemn pledge (*lit.*, dedication) *rājyaṃ dīkṣām iva vahan*, one may aptly cite from the Kauṭīliya-vacana the dictum: *dīkṣā tasyābhiṣecanam*,⁴ 'the solemn pledge (self-dedication) is his consecration'.

If the ideal king is expected to think of the welfare of his subjects just as a loving father does of his sons, the ideal queen matching with him must be one who behaves like a loving mother to them. The ideal queen to the Buddhist poet is Māyā just as Kausalyā is to Vālmīki. So we read:

Prajāsu mātēva hitapravṛttā⁵

In the Sutasoma Jātaka, the ideal king is expected to figure like a compassionate father or mother to his subjects, desirous of their welfare:

Yathā pitā athavāpi mātā
anukampakā atthakāmā pajānaṃ.⁶

Both Daśaratha and Śuddhodana were scions of the Ikṣvāku family of warriors. Both were kings, one of Ayodhyā, the other of Kapilavastu. One had three queens and four sons, while the other had two queens and two sons. The sons of the former were to their loving father like four arms of Viṣṇu, the four-armed god, while the two sons of the latter stood on two sides of their father like the Himalaya, the highest mountain, and the Pāri-pātra, the southern range of hills. Daśaratha and Śuddhodana were both loving and dutiful fathers, and both felt deeply grieved when their sons walked out of the royal cities and kingdoms, one being banished for a period of fourteen years and joyfully accepting the punishment as if it were a self-inflicted one in order to enable his father to redeem his promise, the other renouncing the world for good in order to find out the way of escape from the grip of birth, decay, disease and death and to set an example to others. Rāma had to suffer for his father's sins whereas in the case of Siddhārtha the renunciation was the self-chosen course of life and the attainment to which it led, was just in fulfilment of the prediction made by the Buddhas of the past. Although both Kaikeyī and Mahāprajāpati Gautamī were step-mothers, one to Rāma and the other to Sarvārthasiddha, the latter had no crooked maid like Mantharā to poison her mind; she was throughout the same loving aunt and foster-mother, and in the end a gifted female disciple. The Buddhist counterpart of Vālmīki's Lakṣmaṇa is Nanda, both of whom are emotional creatures with firm personal devotion

¹ *Ibid.*, 29. Cf. Hāthigumphā Inscription in which Khāravela is eulogistically introduced as *rājisi-Vaṃsa-kula-vinīṣito*—Barua, *Old Brāhmī Inscriptions in the Udayagiri and Khaṇḍagiri Caves*, p. 29.

² *Saundarananda*, II, 18.

³ Johnston translates it by 'out of firm devotion to amity with those who were his allies'.

⁴ *Arthaśāstra*, I, 19.

⁵ *Buddhacarita* (Cowell's Ed.), I, 16.

⁶ *Jātaka*, V, p. 504. Cf. Aśoka's *SRE*, II.

to the elder brother who to each of them was the *guru*. Both Lakṣmaṇa and Nanda were separated from their wives. In Lakṣmaṇa we find a younger brother noted for the spirit of self-abnegation, while Nanda represents a most handsome man of passionate nature, full of human weakness. Ūrmilā, the wife of the former, passes as a guileless woman who ungrudgingly bore the pain of separation from her husband, whereas Sundarī, the wife of the latter and the most handsome woman was the beauty of the age with a passionate longing for the company of her husband. Nanda followed his elder brother and *guru* inwardly oppressed by the torments of sexual passion. But Lakṣmaṇa followed Rāma to fall at last a victim at the hands of Kāla (Death), while Nanda followed the Buddha, his elder brother and *guru*, only to escape from the bondage of sin and the clutches of decay and death. Although one may feel that some earlier form of the love-story of Vidyā-Sundara was in the historical background of the love-story of Sundara-Nanda, the redeeming features of the latter are that there is nothing to offend the moral taste and that its culmination is not the physical union of the two lovers. Yaśodharā, the beloved and devoted wife of Siddhārtha, stands pre-eminently as the Buddhist match for Jānakī, the wife of Rāma; even she is more than a match. Sītā, whose Buddhist counterpart is really Mādri, the wife of Viśvantara (Pāli Vessantara), the Bodhisattva, followed her husband and lord like a shadow. She was the cause of the destruction of Bālī and Rāvaṇa and the ruin of Laṅkā and Ayodhyā and she was banished at last and engulfed by the Mother Earth. Yaśodharā, the wife of Siddhārtha, joined the religious order founded by her husband and lord only to find herself at the head of the Buddhist sisters.

Let us pursue further the lines of comparison and contrast as between the life of the Buddha on the one hand and the life of Rāma as depicted in Vālmiki's epic and that of Kṛṣṇa Vāsudeva as depicted in Dvaipāyana's *Great Epic* and *Harivaṃśa* on the other, for without it we shall miss the whole trend of Aśvaghoṣa's poetic delineation of things, events, characters, attainments, thoughts, ideas, principles, acts and teachings with their practical effects on humanity and the course of civilization. We need not bring in for comparison the life of Mahāvīra, the founder of Jainism, for the simple reason that it forms no part of the picture held before us by the Buddhist poet.

The life of the Buddha prior and posterior to the attainment of Buddhahood forms two distinct episodes precisely like the life of Rāma before and after his consecration. The life of the Buddha prior to Buddhahood is the career of Sarvārthasiddha as a highly gifted Śākya prince and heir-apparent to the throne occupied by his worthy father Śuddhodana; his life after Buddhahood is the career of the Tathāgata as the saviour of gods and men, while the intermediate period of six years is occupied by the career of Siddhārtha the ascetic who went out of the world in quest of the truth and also by his activities as a great hero whose exploits were crowned with victory at the most difficult battle with Māra. This victory led to the attainment of Buddhahood which in its turn was followed by the foundation of the kingdom of righteousness. In the case of Rāma, his life before the *abhiṣeka* is his career as a nobly gifted Ikṣvāku prince, his life after the *abhiṣeka* is his career as an ideal Hindu king while the intermediate period of fourteen years is covered by his career as a prince in exile wandering from hermitage to hermitage, from forest to forest, with his wife Sītā and step-brother Lakṣmaṇa and as a great hero whose exploits were crowned with victory at the arduous battle with Rāvaṇa. This victory led to the attainment of the coveted position as a Divinity or God incarnate which

in its turn was followed by his installation as the full-fledged ruler of Ayodhyā.

As regards Kṛṣṇa Vāsudeva, although a similar historical outline may be made out of the legendary account in the *Great Epic* and its supplement, his life has no appeal to Aśvaghōṣa except as God incarnate in the rôle of the *Guru* and teacher in the *Bhagavadgītā*. The Buddhist ethical ideal was deadly against recognizing him even as a *Bodhisattva* or previous personal form of the Buddha.¹ But the case was otherwise with Rāma. So far as the creation of ideal human characters is concerned, Aśvaghōṣa emulated his poetic fame with Vālmiki whom alone he freely acknowledged, as we saw, as *ādikavi*.

If Rāmarājya of Ayodhyā was the ideal state in the delineation of Vālmiki, the Śākyaarājya was equally so in the account given of it by Aśvaghōṣa. But the picture of the Śākyaarājya as an ideal state is held twice before us by the far-famed Buddhist poet, once immediately after the birth of Siddhārtha the prince² and subsequently after the first visit paid to Kapilavastu by Siddhārtha the Tathāgata.³ In the first instance, the picture is one of a kingdom, aglow with all the signs of security, prosperity, contentment, lawful conduct, happiness and piety, in short, all that makes for a popular heaven on earth (*pratyakṣataḥ svargamivopalabhya*),⁴ while in the second instance, it is the changed picture of the life of the people prepared to risk everything for the sake of salvation or leading a more determined and conscious life of moral rectitude and religious fervour from the inner conviction about the truth and the path. The difference between the two lies in that between the kingdom of piety, which can, according to the Buddha, be founded by a virtuous and gifted king overlord (*cakravartin*), and the kingdom of righteousness which is brought into existence by an enlightened teacher of gods and men—a supreme Buddha.⁵

The study of Buddhism has now reached a stage when we are called upon to distinguish between Buddhism from the Buddha's standpoint and that from the standpoint of his disciples and lay-worshippers. If the search for truth and the sure way of salvation be, as suggested, the distinctive feature of the first, the *śaraṇāgati* is undoubtedly the distinctive feature of the second. The whole career of Siddhārtha the ascetic, as depicted by Aśvaghōṣa and others, makes indeed an inspiring and instructive history of the search for truth and its epoch-making result, namely, the attainment of Buddhahood, while the subsequent career of the Buddha Tathāgata is occupied by the vigorous and effective teaching of the Noble Eightfold Path. The latter gave rise to a new *śaraṇāgati* by ardently following which one might be sure of escaping from the rounds of birth and death with the attendant ills and realizing *Nirvāṇa*.

According to the *Bhagavadgītā* (VII, 16) the *śaraṇāgati* is resorted to by the four kinds of persons: one afflicted with a malady, one seeking after truth, one desirous of worldly advantage, and one guided by knowledge and wisdom:

*Caturvidhā bhajante mām janāḥ sukṛtino'ṛjuna |
ārtto jīṇāsaurarthārthī jñānī ca Bharataṛṣabha ||*

The fourth man is ranked the best for the reason that he is led through many births by the noblest of desires and purposes and fully endowed with faith and other moral qualities and faculties, and thus endowed he rightly directs his mind to reach the godhead the essence of whose being is the

¹ Cf. *Ghata Jātaka*, No. 355.

² *Saundarananda*, III, 25-42.

³ *Dīgha*, III, pp. 73 foll. and 76.

⁴ *Buddhacarita*, II, 1-19.

⁵ *Buddhacarita*, II, 12.

supreme state of tranquillity (*parā śānti*). One realizes *Brahma-nirvāṇa* by obtaining this state.

But as defined in the Theravāda or Hīnayāna form of Buddhism of which Āsvaghoṣa is a powerful exponent, the very word *śaraṇa* implies that a person searching for it is inwardly driven by the fear of an impending danger as well as that the refuge sought for is one which is the most secure and safest, hence the very best that is available:

Baḥuṃ ve saraṇaṃ yanti pabbatāni vanāni ca |
 ārama-rukka-cetyāni maṇussa bhayatajjitā ||
 N'etaṃ kho saraṇaṃ khemaṃ, n'etaṃ saraṇaṃ uttamaṃ |
 n'etaṃ saraṇaṃ āgama sabbadukkhā pamuccati ||
 Yo ca Buddhaṃ ca Dhammaṃ ca Saṅghaṃ ca saraṇaṃgato |
 cattāri Ariya-saccāni sammapaññāya passati ||
 Dukkhaṃ dukkhasamuppādaṃ dukkhassa ca atikkamaṃ |
 ariyaṃ c'atthaṅgikaṃ maggaṃ dukkhūpasamaḡāminam ||
 Etaṃ kho saraṇaṃ khemaṃ, etaṃ saraṇaṃ uttamaṃ |
 etaṃ saraṇaṃ āgama sabbadukkhā pamuccati || ¹

'Frightened by fear they betake themselves to many a refuge, to sacred hills, woodlands, pleasancess and tree-shrines. But this is the safe refuge, the refuge which is the best, none betaking oneself to such a refuge escapes entirely from all suffering. He who (however) is gone to the Buddha, the Doctrine and the Order as his refuge (and) perceives through the right understanding (the nature of) the Four Noble Truths—the Ill, its rise, its overcoming, and the Noble Eightfold Path leading to the relief from the ill,—this is verily the safe refuge, the refuge which is the best: having come to this refuge, one escapes entirely from all suffering.'

Thus in the Buddhist idea of *śaraṇāgati* the seeker of the refuge is primarily the *ārtta* or 'one who is upset' and in the course of seeking he becomes the inquirer, eager to know the things as they are, desirous of attaining to the best goods that are attainable, and becomes the wise, replete with knowledge, emancipated and living with the satisfaction that all that had to be done has been done. The two typical historical examples of such a *śaraṇāgati* chosen by Āsvaghoṣa for delineation are those of Nanda, the half brother of Siddhārtha, and Śāriputra, who figured as the chief disciple of the Buddha.

If the *śaraṇāgati* and *śaraṇa* be relative ideas, one implying the other, the best kind of *śaraṇāgati* must have for its refuge the best of the *śaraṇas*. The *Bhagavadgītā* represents Kṛṣṇa Vāsudeva as the best and only *śaraṇa* for all the four classes of devotees, for He is the alpha and the omega of everything, the omniform, omnipresent and omnipotent personal God,—the Supreme Being. All kinds of offering, all modes of worship are ultimately meant for Him alone, and all are exhorted to leave everything else for His sake. The Sātvata or Bhāgavatic *śaraṇāgati* signifies the devotion to Him alone, only His worship with a single heart and accepting Him as the ultimate goal:

Manmanā bhava madbhakto madyājī māṃ namaskuru |
 māmevaiśyasi yuktāivamātmānaṃ matparāyaṇaḥ || ²

In the Pali commentaries, the *śaraṇāgati* is psychologically defined as 'the birth of a religious impulse, whether due to reliance on others or not, in the form of the tendency to accept that as the ultimate, with the consciousness of the sins being utterly destroyed through one's serene faith

¹ *Dhammapada* (PTS), vv. 188-192.

² *Bhagavadgītā*, IX, 34.

in that, having that for the *guru*, which impels a person to believe, thinking, "this is my refuge", "this is my ideal".¹

We have already discussed the difference and distinction between *parapratyaya* and *aparapratyaya* in *śaraṇāgati* as interpreted by Aśvaghoṣa.²

The three Refuges usually offered for *śaraṇāgati* in Hinayāna to the afflicted world are, as we saw, the Buddha, the Doctrine, and the Order. In the Mahāparinibbāna Suttanta, the Buddha suggests *karma* as the refuge of men (*kamma-paṭisaraṇā*)³ and in another context, exhorts his disciples to make themselves their own refuge, not others,—to be attasaraṇā, anaññasaraṇā.⁴ The Dhamma embodying all the tenets of the Master was to take the place of the Master in his absence. After the death of the Buddha one of his disciples declared 'Mayaṃ dhammapaṭisaraṇā' (the doctrine is indeed our refuge now).⁵ So there is no wonder that Aśvaghoṣa should speak of the *śila* (moral behaviour according to the prescribed rules of conduct) as being the *śaraṇa* or *āśraya* for a religious aspirant:

*Śīlaṃ hi śaraṇaṃ saumya kāntāra iva daiśikāḥ*⁶

As Buddhaghosa points out, the ultimate refuge for all beings is *nirvāṇa*.⁷ In commenting on the predicate, *sabbatopabham*⁸ as applied to *nirvāṇa*, Buddhaghosa takes it also to mean that whatever the nature of the effort or the mode of approach, all are directed to the attainment of *nirvāṇa* which is the ultimate goal.⁹ This significant explanation of the predicate goes at once to make *nirvāṇa* the impersonal counterpart of Kṛṣṇa Vāsudeva, the godhead of the *Bhagavadgītā*. Although the Brahma-*nirvāṇa* attainable within the bosom of such a godhead and the Buddhistic *nirvāṇa* not attainable in the heart of such a Supreme Being are almost characterized alike, Aśvaghoṣa's depiction of *nirvāṇa* is faithful to the delineation which was shaping itself through the texts of the *Sūtra Piṭaka*. The extinguishing of a burning lamp when its oil is exhausted is the familiar simile suggested by Pāṇini¹⁰ and met with alike in the Sūtra texts¹¹ and the *Bhagavadgītā*.¹² But behind the following description of *nirvāṇa* by the Buddhist poet was certainly a Buddhist text such as one contained in the *Aggi-vacchagotta Sutta*:

Dīpo yathā nirvṛtimabhyupeto naivāvanim gacchati nāntarikṣam |
disaṃ na kāmceidvidisaṃ na kāmceit snehakṣayāt kevalameti śāntim ||¹³

¹ Paramatthajotikā on the Khuddakapāṭha (PTS), p. 16: Tappasādataggarukutāhi vihataviddhamsilakilesa tapparāyanatākārappavatto parapaccayo vā aparapaccayo vā cittuppadō saraṇagamanam (yena) cittuppadena 'esa me saraṇam' 'esa me parāyanan'ti. B. C. Law, *Concepts of Buddhism*, Chapter I; cf. *Sumaṅgalavilāsini*, I, p. 231.

² Saundarananda, V, 16-18, XVII, 15.

³ Jāt., VI, p. 102; Majjhima, III, p. 203.

⁴ Digha, III, pp. 58, 77; cf. *Bhagavadgītā*, VI, 5—uddharedātmanātmānam.

⁵ Majjhima, III, p. 9.

⁶ Saundarananda, XIII, 28; cf. XVI, 30.

⁷ *Sumaṅgalavilāsini*, I, p. 231.

⁸ Majjhima, I, p. 329: Viññānam anidassanam anantaṃ sabbato pabham.

⁹ Papañca-sūdanī, II, p. 413. Pabham ti tiṭṭhassa nāmaṃ. Sabbato pabham assā ti sabbatopabham. Nibbānassa kira yathā mahāsamuddassa yato yato otarukāmā honti tam tad eva tiṭṭham; atitṭham nāma n'atthi. Evam eva atṭhatimsāya kammaṭṭhānesu yena yena mulhena nibbānam osaritukāmā honti, tam tad eva tiṭṭham nibbānassa.

¹⁰ Pāṇini, VI, 2, 8; VIII, 2, 50: nivāte vātrāṇe, nirvāṇo 'vāte.

¹¹ Ratana Sutta: nibbanti dhārā yathāyaṃ padīpo.

¹² *Bhagavadgītā*, VI, 19: Yathā dīpo nivātasṭho nengate sopamā smṛtā.

¹³ Saundarananda, XVI, 28; cf. Majjhima, I, p. 487: ayam me purato aggi nibbuto ti . . . yo te ayam purato aggi nibbuto so aggi ito katamaṃ disaṃ gato, puratthimaṃ vā pacchimaṃ vā uttaraṃ vā dakkhiṇaṃ vāti . . . Na upeti bho Gotama. Yam hi so bho Gotama aggi tīnakatṭhupādānaṃ paṭicca ajāti, tassa ca pariyādānā añhassa ca anupahārā anāhāro nibbuto.

Although Aśvaghōṣa is most eloquent in his praise of the Master's Doctrine and the Order represented by the great Disciples of old, he is nowhere found expressly mentioning the Buddha, the Doctrine and the Order as the Three Refuges. So far as the life of Nanda is concerned, the whole stress is laid on his personal devotion to the Master. The Śākyas are said to have 'devoutly made obeisance to the Great Sage':

mahāmunaḥ bhaktivaśāt praṇemuḥ ¹

It is said of Nanda:

Atha samrādhito Nandaḥ śraddhām prati maharṣiṇā |
pariśikto'mṛteneva yuyuḥ parayā mudā ||
Kṛtārthamiva taṃ mene Sambuddhaḥ śraddhayā tayā |
mene prāptamiva śreyaḥ sa ca Buddhena saṃskṛtaḥ || ²

'So on being confirmed in the direction of faith by the Great Seer, Nanda was filled with the highest joy, as if bathed in ambrosia. The Enlightened One deemed that Nanda had, as it were, attained his goal through that faith and he too deemed that by the Buddha's initiation he had, as it were, already reached the highest good.'

But such emphasis on the importance of personal devotion to the Buddha and following him as the *guru* laid by Aśvaghōṣa in the case of Nanda does not mean that he made a wide departure from the Hinayāna tradition. It cannot be mistaken that his intention throughout is to establish the superior worth of the Three Refuges, namely, the *Tathāgata*, the *Mokṣadharmā*, and the *Ārya Saṅgha* from the viewpoint of the *śaraṇa-gati* which he himself adopted in preference to the one advocated in the Brahmanical tradition.

The first Refuge is the historical founder of Buddhism. As a man, he was most favourably situated. He got the best of fathers, the best of mothers, the best of foster-mothers, the best of wives, the best of brothers, the best of peoples, the best of racial heritages, and was born in the best of continents, the best of countries, the best of nationalities, the best of natural environs. As a person, he was highly gifted, best endowed with qualities, and possessed of the best bodily form and stature. As a personality, he proved himself to be the *Tathāgata*, the *Sugata* or well-gone, the *Jina* or conqueror, and the *Dharmacakra-pravartaka* or founder of a kingdom of righteousness on a solid and stable foundation. From the point of view of the disciples, such as Nanda and Śāriputra, he was the *vināyaka* or expert trainer, the *sārathī* or driver, the *maharṣi* or great seer, the *mahāmuni* or great contemplative, the *vaidehamuni*, the *hitaiṣi* or benefactor, the *mahā-kāruṇika* or *paramakāruṇika*, compassionate like father, mother or brother, the *śāstā* or teacher, the *mārga-kovida* or knower of the path, the *sudaiśika* or excellent guide, the *śalyoddhāra-kartā* or puller of the dirt, the *śokasya hartā śaraṇāgatānaṃ* or stealer of sorrow from the seekers of the refuge, the *śokasya kartā pratigarvitānaṃ* or causer of sorrow to the proud and conceited, and the like. The bodily marks of great men, the divine arrangements, the predictions, the supernormal faculties and other traditional methods of deifications are availed of in establishing his divinity and divine mission. But just as in Vālmiki's *Rāmāyana* the human character of Rāma is sought to be presented, so in the kāvyas of Aśvaghōṣa, the human side of the Buddha's personality is sought to be maintained and emphasized. Although the poetical dialogues in the *Bhagavadgītā* immensely influenced those in the *Saundarananda-kāvya*, the incongruities of thoughts are not

¹ *Saundarananda*, V, 1.

² *Ibid.*, XIII, 1-2.

sought to be harmonized in the bold declarations and claims of an omnipotent, omniscient and omnipresent Supreme Being in the rôle of a teacher, guide, eye-opener and bringer of salvation. There is nowhere the attempt to overwhelm and overawe with an omniform. The predicates applied to the Master or the glowing compliments gratefully paid to him by Nanda, that is to say, by Aśvaghōṣa, are all in harmony and in keeping with those met with in the Sūtra literature and the traditions and words of the great disciples of the past—the *Theras* and the *Therīs*.¹ The definition of the Master as in the Mirror of Faith (*Dharmādarśa*) and the Lineage of Faith (*Dharmānvaya*) guided the Buddhist poet and teacher in this and other matters.

The third Refuge is the Saṅgha, better the Āryasaṅgha or Ideal Order. Aśvaghōṣa gives us a list of the great disciples of the past, which is almost in complete agreement with that of those placed foremost in different capacities and special gifts in the Etadaggavagga of the *Aṅguttara Nikāya*.² Aśvaghōṣa's list contains the names of such notable examples in the past in the practice of yoga as Kaundinya, Nanda, Kṛmīla, Aniruddha, Tiṣya, Upasena, Vimāla, Rādha, Vāṣpa, Uttara, Dhautaki, Moharāja, Kātyāyana, Dravya, Pilindavatsa, Bhaddālī, Bhadrāyana, Sarpadāsa, Subhūti, Godatta, Sujāta, Vatsa, Saṃgrāmajit, Bhadrājī, Aśvajit, Śroṇa, Śoṇa Koṭikārṇa, Ajita, Upālī, Vāgīśa, Yaśas, Yaśoda, Mahābhvyaya, Valkalin, Rāṣṭrapāla, Sudarśana, Svāgata, Meghika, Kapphina, Kāśyapa of Uruvilvā, Mahāmahākāśyapa, Tiṣya, Nanda, Pūrṇa, Pūrṇaka, Pūrṇa Sonāparānta, Śāradvatīputra, Subāhu, Cunda, Kondeya, Kāpya, Bhṛgu, Kuṇṭhadhāna, Śaivala, Revata, Kauṣṭhila, Maudgalyāyana and Gavāmpati among the *Theras*, and Kṣemā and mothers of Nandaka and Nanda among the *Therīs*.³ They are obviously pitted against the Ṛṣis of old, many of whom acquired notoriety for their moral pitfalls. The Ṛṣis mentioned by name are Vasiṣṭha, Parāśara, Dvaipāyana, Aṅgiras, Kāśyapa, Aṅgada, Ṛṣyaśṛṅga, and Sthūlaśiras.⁴ It was not the intention of Aśvaghōṣa to make such an invidious distinction; it resulted incidentally from the description. The pitfalls of the sages and seers are stated just by way of illustration of the captivating powers and wily arts of women:

Bhāvena garveṇa gatena lakṣmyā
smitena kopena madena vāgbhīḥ |
jahnuḥ striyo devanṛparśisaṃghān⁵

'By their guiles, display, gait, grace, smiles, feigning of anger, infatuation and pleasant voices women captivated the body of divine and royal seers.' If Nanda among the Buddha's disciples were taken as typical of those with a passionate heart for the fair sex, he was taken by the hand by the great Guru, made to see things with his own eyes and understand the truth, with the happy result that he attained to Arhatship which is a saintly state above all moral pitfalls.

In the same skilful way the superiority of the Doctrine of Buddhism is suggested and sought to be established. The Doctrine consists of the main philosophy, the fundamental tenets, the prescribed methods and efforts, the ethical principles of conduct, the precepts, the ideal and the

¹ The predicates to be applied to the Buddha in the rôle of a Teacher are summed up in the *Paramatthajotikā*, I, pp. 21ff., *Sam.*, I, 47; III, 84; *Milinda*, 70; *Sam.*, I, 50, 132, 206, 301; *Aṅguttara*, I, 142; II, 33; III, 65; *Suttanipāta*, 157 foll.; *Sam.*, I, 186; *Dhammapadamāṭṭhakathā*, I, 233; *P.T.S. Dictionary*, s.v. *Buddha*.

² B. C. Law, *Early Buddhist Brothers and Sisters*, *JRASB*, XI, 1945, No. I, pp. 39ff.

³ *Saundarananda kāvya*, XVI, 87-91.

⁴ *Ibid.*, VII, 28-36.

⁵ *Ibid.*, VII, 24.

summum bonum. If it be the task of philosophy to offer a rational and satisfactory explanation for pleasure and pain in the world, in individual lives, this explanation is to be found in the Buddha's doctrine of causation or dependent origination,¹ and not in God, not in the primordial matter, not in time, not in nature, not in fate, not in chance, not even in the Sāṃkhya doctrine of *puruṣa* and *prakṛti*:

Pravṛtti-duḥkhasya ca tasya loke
tṛṣṇādayo doṣagaṇā nimittam |
naiveśvaro na prakṛtirna kālo
nāpi svabhāvo na vidhīyadṛcchā ||²

'Craving and such other flaws are the cause of suffering in the common run of the world, but neither a creator, nor primordial matter, neither time nor the nature of things, neither fate nor chance.'

And again:

Yataśca saṃskāragataṃ viviktaṃ
na kāraḥ kaścana vedako vā |
sāmagryataḥ sambhavati pravṛtṭih
śūnyaṃ tato lokamimaṃ dadarśa ||
Yasmānnirīhaṃ jagadasvatantraṃ
naiśvaryamekaḥ kurute kriyāsu |
tattat pratītya prabhavanti bhāvā
nirātmakaṃ tena viveda lokaṃ ||³

'Since the individual is a mere creature of the saṃskāras, there is neither the agent nor the internal percipient. The common run (of the world) follows from the conjuncture of circumstances, he saw that the world is devoid of any abiding entity.' 'Since the world has no motive force of its own and is not self-dependent, and since there is no one being who exercises paramountcy over actions, and since states of being arise from dependence on other states, he understood the world to be without soul.'

Āsvaghoṣa has here faithfully represented the scholastic Hīnayāna definition of cause as meaning a combination of circumstances (*paccaya-sāmaggi*) sufficient in itself to account for the happening of events and refutation of all theories seeking to account for such happenings by any single cause or agent.⁴

A longer discussion of the issues raised is offered in the *Buddhacarita*,⁵ and the longest in the Indian original of the Chinese *Fo-sho-hing-tsan-king*.⁶ These discussions may be regarded as mere later elaborations of the three pairs of extreme positions in thought that were meant to be avoided⁷ as well as of the canonical criticisms of the theory of creation by God, the doctrine of fate, and the doctrine of chance.⁸

The dialectics employed by Āsvaghoṣa in refuting the theistic idea of God clearly foreshadow the later treatise called *Īśvarabhāṅgakārikā*.

As to the Sāṃkhya-Yoga method of salvation advocated by Arāḍa Kālāma, we must observe that nowhere else in earlier Buddhist literature

¹ *Fo-sho-hing-tsan-king* (Beal's tr.), p. 194: 'Whatever things exist all spring from cause, the principles (cause) of birth and death (may be) destroyed, the way is by the means he has declared.' This is but a free Chinese rendering of the familiar Buddhist creed formula—*ye dharmāḥ hetuprabhavāḥ*, etc.

² *Saundarananda*, XVI, 17.

³ Cf. *Atthasālinī*, pp. 59ff.

⁴ IX, 63-69.

⁵ *Ibid.*, XVII, 20-21.

⁶ XVIII, 15-65.

⁷ Barua, *A History of pre-Buddhist Indian Philosophy*, pp. 406ff.

⁸ *Anguttara*, III, p. 440: *sabbam ahetu-appaccayā, adhiccasamuppannā; Aṅguttara*, I, pp. 173ff.—*pubbekatahetu, issaranimmāṇahetu, ahetuappaccayā; Mahābodhi Jātaka* (Fausböll), V, pp. 237ff.

is the Sāṃkhya or philosophic aspect of Kālāma's doctrine described. It may be taken, however, for granted that the Yoga practice was inseparably linked up with Sāṃkhya or Adhyātmavidyā¹ standing for the ascertainment of the true and ultimate nature of the soul within each of us. It is rightly said in the *Bhagavadgītā*, V, 4-5 :

Sāṃkhya-yogau prthagbālāḥ pravādanti na paṇḍitāḥ |
Yat Sāṃkhyaiḥ prāpyate sthānam tad yogairapi gamyate
ekam Sāṃkhyam ca Yogam ca yaḥ paśyati sa paśyati ||

In the *Kaṭha Upaniṣad* the Sāṃkhya terms are employed to denote the gradation in the upward course of the Yogī from one stage of realization to another, the highest stage being reached when he gets to the *purusa*, and *purusa* alone, above the stage of the *avyakta* or unmanifest or unmodified state of the primordial matter. It is claimed that there is no stage to be reached higher than this:

puruṣān na paraṃ kimcit, sā kāsthā sā parā gatiḥ |

This is in substance the Sāṃkhya-Yoga position as represented by Kṛṣṇa Vāsudeva in the *Bhagavadgītā* and by Arāḍa Kālāma in the *Buddhacarita*.² The highest stage of trance reached by Arāḍa Kālāma, called *ākīṃcanya* or 'nothingness'³ really means the stage in which there is awareness of the existence of nothing but the *purusa* or soul, the knower of the entire field of consciousness (*kṣetrajñāḥ*).

What is particularly important here to note is that the arguments put into the mouth of the ascetic Siddhārtha by way of criticism of Arāḍa's Sāṃkhya-Yoga method are all in the form of subtle dialectics reminding us at once of those employed extensively in the *Mādhyaṃika Kārikā* of Nāgārjuna (B.T.S. Ed., Chap. 24, verse 10, p. 180). The following three *ślokas* may suffice to indicate what they are or stand for:

Guṇino hi guṇānām ca vyatireko na vidyate |
rūpoṣṇābhyām virahito na hyagnirupalabhyate ||
Prāgdehān na bhaveddehī prāggunebhyastathā guṇi |
tasmādādau vimuktaḥ san śarīrī badhyate punaḥ ||
Kṣetrajño viśarīraśca jño vā syādajña eva vā |
yadi jño jñeyamasyāsti jñeye sati na mucyate ||⁴

'For no distinction exists between the attributes and the possessor of the attributes, for instance, fire is not perceived, when devoid of outward appearance and heat. Before a conglomerate mass exists, there cannot be a possessor of the mass; so, before attributes exist, there cannot be a possessor of the attributes. Therefore the soul, as possessor of the body, being first released, is subsequently bound to it again.'

'And the knower of the field, when without a body, must be either knowing or unknowing. If it is knowing, there is something for it to know, and if there is something for it to know, it is not liberated.'

The upshot of the criticism offered is that the subject-object relation is not really transcended in the *Ākiñcanya* state of trance, it is just fancied that it is transcended. The *kleśas* remain latent. But this is the main point in the traditional Buddhist criticism of Arāḍa's, as also of Rudra

¹ *Kaṭha Up*, II, 18:

labdhvā vidyām etām yogavidhiṃ ca kṛtsnam |

Brahmaprāpto virajo'bhūddhi mṛtyur anyo-pyevam yo vid adhyātmam
eva |

² XII, 17-65.

³ *Ibid.*, XII, 63.

⁴ *Buddhacarita*, XII, 76-78.

Rāmaputra's position. Āsvaghoṣa just made explicit what is implicit in the Sūtra texts.¹

Āsvaghoṣa's representation of the Buddhist way of salvation as the Middle Path meaning the Noble Eightfold Path is thoroughly in keeping with the Sūtras and Śāstras which were authorities for him. The Tathāgata is said to have pointed out to his first five disciples:

'The emaciated devotee by suffering produces in himself confused and sickly thoughts, not conducive even to worldly knowledge, how much less to triumph over sense! . . . In seeking wisdom then it is not by these austerities a man may reach the law of life. But (likewise) to indulge in pleasure is opposed to right, this is the fool's barrier against wisdom's light. The sensualist cannot comprehend the Sūtras or the Śāstras, how much less the way of overcoming all desire! . . . I, then, reject both these extremes, my heart keeps in the middle way.'²

Although the best of hermit-life in calm, sombre, and peaceful sylvan surroundings was to be seen in the hermitage of Kapila, Āsvaghoṣa does not omit to mention that the path of asceticism could not lead to release from rebirth. With regard to the inmates of this hermitage, the Buddhist poet characteristically maintains:

Samdigdhe'pyapunarbhāve viruddheśvāgameśvapi |
pratyakṣiṇa ivākurvamstapo yatra tapodhanāḥ ||
Yatra sma miyate Brahma kaiścit kaiścinna miyate |
Kāle nīmiyate somo na cākāle pramiyate ||
Nirapekṣāḥ śarīreṣu dharme yatra svabuddhayaḥ |
saṃhr̥ṣṭā iva yatnena tāpasāstepire tapaḥ ||
Śrāmyanto munayo yatra svargāyodyuktacetasaḥ |
taporāgena dharmasya vilopamiva cakrire ||³

'Though their release from rebirth was open to doubt and their scriptures were contradictory, yet the ascetics there practised asceticism as if possessed of supernormal perception (of its result). There some contemplated the Absolute; no one at all did hurt; soma was measured out at the proper time; and no one died untimely. There the ascetics, following their own opinions in the matter of religion and regardless of their bodies, practised austerities as if overjoyed with their toil. There the sages, with minds aspiring to Paradise, strove so hard that they seemed by their very passion for austerities to destroy religion (which consists in passionlessness).'

The other extreme course of life is made to be typified by the princely life led by Siddhārtha, and in a more accentuated form, by his half-brother Nanda. The life of a householder, especially in a royal house or aristocratic family, was taken to be typical of the life given up to the five varieties of sensual pleasure. For the description of the ugly, revolting and sensual scenes in a royal or aristocratic bed-chamber of the dancing girls sleeping pell-mell on the floor, the Buddhist poet need not be a borrower from Vālmiki's epic giving a vivid description of the scene Hanuman saw when he stealthily entered into Rāvaṇa's bed-chamber at night. All that we find in Āsvaghoṣa's kāvyas may be regarded just also as a later poetical elaboration of the short description contained in the Vinaya Mahāvagga,⁴ the Jātaka Nidāna-kathā, and the like.

¹ Cf. Ariyapariyesana Sutta, Majjhima, I, pp. 161ff.

² Fo-sho-hing-tsan-king (Beal's tr.), pp. 174-5.

³ Saundarananda, I, 14-17.

⁴ Vinaya, I, p. 15: Tena kho pana samayena Bārāṇasīyaṃ Yaso nāma kulaputto seṭṭhiputto . . . vassike pāsāde cattāro māse nippurisehi turīyeḥ paricāriyamāno na

Āsvaghoṣa's delineation of the diverse ways in which women try to captivate men's heart may similarly be viewed as an elaboration of the significant Jātaka expression, *itthi-kutthu-hāvabhāva-vilāsa*¹ meaning 'womanly wiles and guiles, gestures and postures'. But the Kunāla Jātaka enumerates the forty different signs by which a woman may seek to captivate a man.² These are certainly the artifices of lust that fall within the scope of the Indian science of erotic with which Āsvaghoṣa was intimately acquainted.

The aversion to or animadversion upon the fair sex (*strī-jugupsā*) in which Āsvaghoṣa has indulged *ad nauseam* is typically ascetic as well as Buddhistic, although, as it seems, the torments of sexual passion described by him have a personal note in them. In Āsvaghoṣa's *strī-jugupsā*, one has a clear anticipation of the reflections contained in the *strī-jugupsā* group of verses in the *Dharmasamuccaya* compiled in Nepal as the latest Sanskrit recension of the *Dhammapada*.³

The five *indriyas*, the five *balas*, the four noble truths, the seven *bodhyaṅgas*, the Noble Eightfold Path, and the remaining principal terms of Buddhism as a system of thought (*bodhipakṣikadharmāḥ*) are appropriately employed and authoritatively explained. Their opposites too, are fittingly set out in the traditional manner. The importance of *śīla*, *saṃādhi* and *prajñā* is sufficiently emphasized. The practice of *indriya-saṃvara* and *kāyagatā smṛti* and the obedience to the ethical principles receive their due importance. The successive stages of *śrāmaṇya* are set out and vividly described in the traditional manner of the *Sāmaññaphala Sutta*.⁴ Āsvaghoṣa's presentation of Buddhism is saturated with Buddhist technical terms and ideas, phrases and idioms, similes and metaphors, maxims and many *obiter dicta*. If it appears that here and there are found conscious or unconscious borrowings of expressions and ideas from Brahmanical works, these are rather fruitful heritages from his previous study.

Let us, consider, for instance, Āsvaghoṣa's description of *śīla*. He declares:

Śīlāmāsthāya vartante sarvā hi śreyasi kriyāḥ |
sthānādyānīva kāryāṇi pratiṣṭhāya vasundharām ||⁵
ataḥ śīlaṃ nayatyagryamiti śīlaṃ viśodhaya |⁶
Śīlānācchīlamityuktaṃ śīlaṃ sevānādapi |
sevanam tannideśācca nideśācca tadāśrayāt ||
Śīlaṃ hi śaraṇaṃ saumya kāntāra iva daiśikāḥ |
mitraṃ bandhuśca rakṣā ca dhanam ca balameva ca ||⁷

Here the first stanza crystallizes the ideas contained in the following words of the Buddha:

Śīle patitṭhāya naro sapañño cittaṃ paññañca bhāvayaṃ ||⁸

heṭṭhā pāsādāṃ orohati. Atha kho Yasassa kulaputtassa pañcahi kāmagaṇehi samappi-tassa samaṅgibhutassa paricāriyamānassa paṭigacceva niddā okkamī, pariyaṇassāpi pacchā niddā okkamī, sabbarattiyo ca telappadīpo jhāyati. Atha kho Yaso kulaputto paṭigacceva paṭibujjhivā addasa sakaṃ pariyaṇaṃ supantaṃ, aññissā kacche vīṇā, aññissā kacche mudiṅgaṃ, aññissā ure ālambaraṃ, aññaṃ vikesikaṃ, aññaṃ vikheḷikaṃ aññā vippalapaṇṭiyo hatthapattaṃ susānaṃ maññe.

¹ *Jātaka* (Fausböll), II, p. 128 f.n. 15.

² *Jātaka*, V, pp. 433-34; B. C. Law, *Women in Buddhist Literature*, p. 51.

³ *Indian Culture*, Vol. III, p. 366.

⁴ *Saundarananda*, XVII; *Digha*, I.

⁵ *Ibid.*, XIII, 21.

⁶ *Ibid.*, XIII, 26.

⁷ *Ibid.*, XIII, 27-28.

⁸ *Samyutta*, I, pp. 13 and 165.

The characterization of *śīla* and the exposition of the subject as a whole cannot but remind us of what is significantly brought out in the *Milinda* (p. 34):

‘ayaṃ patitṭhā dharanī va pāṇinam,
idañca mūlaṃ kusalābhivuddhiyā,
mukhañ c’idaṃ sabbajinānusāsane
yo silakhandho varapātimokkhiyoti.’

‘This is the foundation—like the earth to human beings—this is the root of increase in goodness, this is the beginning of the teaching of all conquerors (Buddhas), this is the moral precept as laid down in the excellent Pātimokkha.’

In the *Visuddhimagga* (P.T.S., I, pp. 8ff.) too, *śīla* is mentioned as the distinctive characteristic of *śīla*.

It is undeniable that the *Bhagavadgītā*¹ lays much stress on the need of *śraddhā* (faith) for a devotee. But that does not mean that the Buddhist poet was much influenced by it. Āśvaghōṣa’s *śraddhā* is the first of the five *indriyas* and *balas* of Buddhism. The representation of *śraddhā* as the seed (*bījaṃ*) of higher life² is thoroughly Buddhistic. With the canonical dictum, *saddhā bījaṃ*,³ it was easy for Āśvaghōṣa to elaborate the idea as follows:

Punaśca bījamityuktā nimittam śreyasotpadā |
pāvanārthena pāpasya nadītyabhihitā punaḥ ||
Yasmāddharmasya cotpattau śraddhā kāraṇamuttamaṃ |
mayoktā kāryatastasmāt tatra tatra tathā tathā ||
Śraddhāṅkuramimaṃ tasmāt samvardhayitumarhasi |
tad vṛddhau vardhate dharmo mūlavṛddhau yathā drumah ||⁴

The same remark applies with equal force to the Buddhist poet’s delineation of *vīrya* (energy) and other faculties and powers.

One may naturally be inclined to trace the influence of the then known Sāṃkhya doctrine in Āśvaghōṣa’s definition of *duḥkha* (suffering), according to which the essence of suffering is the impediment to free will (*bādhātmakam duḥkhamidaṃ*).⁵ The mention of fluidity as the essential quality of the element of water and hardness as that of earth (*apāṃ dravatvaṃ kaṭhinatvamurvyāḥ*),⁶ and representation of the purposes of religious efforts (*samyak pradhānāḥ*) in such negative terms as *alabdhasyālābho niyatamupalabdhasya vigamaḥ*⁷ also bear testimony to his previous study of the Brahmanical system of thought. The four terms, *sāma*, *dāna*, *bheda* and *danḍa*, connoting the fourfold policy of the state⁸ may similarly point to Brahmanical works on polity as their source. But these are commonplaces for a learned and intelligent man like Āśvaghōṣa born and brought up in Brahmanical tradition. The main trend of his thought is Buddhistic, nothing but Buddhistic. If other ideas came along with it, they did so as they were found not incompatible with the Buddhist mode of thinking.

¹ IV, 39-40; VI, 47; VII, 21-22; XVII, 2-3.

² *Saundarananda*, XII, 39.

³ ‘Saddhā bījaṃ, tapo vuṭṭhi, paññā me yuganaṅgalam.’—*Sutta Nipāta* (P.T.S.), p. 13.

⁴ *Saundarananda*, XII, 39-41.

⁵ *Ibid.*, XVI, 4.

⁶ *Ibid.*, XVI, 12.

⁷ *Ibid.*, XVI, 95; cf. Kauṭilya’s *Arthaśāstra*, I, 4, *alabdhalābhārthā, labdhaparīrakṣaṇā*.

⁸ *Saundarananda*, XV, 61.

*Sāmnā dānena bhedenā danḍena niyamena vā |
prāpto hi rabhaso mṛtyuḥ pratihantum na śakyate ||*

CHAPTER V

AŚVAGHOṢA'S DELINEATIONS

The effectiveness of Aśvaghōṣa's narration is freely admitted as a distinctive feature of the kāvyas of Aśvaghōṣa. In the preceding chapter we have tried to show how the great Buddhist poet sought to exhibit his art of delineation through an easy-flowing narration of episodes. In other words, how men and things as depicted by him were to assume an ideal character of their own. His art of narration has so far been sufficiently emphasized but not his art of delineation of characters. The two kāvyas of Aśvaghōṣa may be shown to differ from each other in these respects. In the *Buddhacarita* the art of delineation is subordinated to that of narration, while in the *Saundarananda* the latter is subordinated to the former. The reasons for this difference are not, perhaps, far to seek.

A connected life of the Buddha was being developed by his disciples within the Vinaya framework of the Buddhist ecclesiastical history. In the two Pali or Theravāda Vinaya Books called *Mahāvagga* and *Cullavagga*, the narration of historical episodes commences from the attainment of Buddhahood and closes with the account of the second Buddhist council. The earlier life of the Buddha covered by the careers of Siddhārtha as a Śākya prince and as an ascetic is left there altogether out of account. The earlier life which was gradually developed in the Vinaya texts of other sects may be shown to have its framework in the Pali *Mahāpadāna Suttanta*¹ in which the term *Pātimokkha-uddesa*² is employed to mean the declaration of the higher ethical principles such as those contained in the *Dhammapada*, and not that of the sections and rules of the Vinaya code of *Pātimokkha*. The *Mahāpadāna Suttanta* gives a clear hint at the growing tendency of the Buddhist mind to attach greater importance to the imitation of the Master's life or to the ethical and spiritual side of Buddhism rather than to follow a legal or formal code of conduct. Through the successive rise of the Buddhist sects and schools of thought one may watch with interest how the history of the church was gradually outweighed by the life-history of the Buddha. There was a backward move from the Buddhahood to the birth of Siddhārtha, and therefrom by further and further extension into the past to the commencement of the life of the Bodhisattva in the *prañidhāna* or mental resolve of the hermit Sumedha to become a Buddha. Aśvaghōṣa in his *Buddhacarita*, starts the history from the birth of Siddhārtha and closes it with the redistribution and enshrinement of the bodily remains of the Buddha by king Aśoka. It is just the First Buddhist Council that finds mention in his kāvyā.

The case is quite different with his later kāvyā called *Saundarananda*. The Nanda episode which is used as the main theme of narration formed also one of the many episodes of the great career of the Buddha as the teacher of gods and men. The same holds true of the Śāriputra episode which is made the main theme of Aśvaghōṣa's drama, the *Śāriputraprakaraṇa*. Thus the Nanda episode is relevantly fitted into the frame of the life of the Buddha. But here the Buddhist poet appears to have a free hand to consciously devote himself to the task of poetic delineation of men

¹ *Dīgha*, II, pp. 1-54.

² *Ibid.*, p. 46—*pātimokkhuḍdesāyāvi*.

and things in their ideal forms. The dramatic art employed in the *Śāri-putraprakaraṇa* is essentially the one and the same art of delineation of characters. Here we shall take up for consideration some typical delineations.

To raise the importance of the Śākya territory and to increase the significance of the cultural heritage of the Śākya race it was felt necessary to describe eulogistically the life and attainment of Ṛṣi Kapila and the beauty and glory of his abode or hermitage after which the Śākya royal city was named. Asvaghōṣa is careful, however, not to openly represent Ṛṣi Kapila as the propounder of the Sāṃkhya system of philosophy, although he speaks of him as being a *Siddha*. In the Chinese version of the *Buddhacarita* (XXI, 24), one Ṛṣi Kapila is said to have been converted by the Buddha to his new faith during his visit to Mahīvatī (Māhīṣmatī?). Evidently this Kapila was a different individual.

The virtuous sage Kapila belonging to the family of Gautama had his abode in the Himalayan region. He practised asceticism like Kāśyapa and attained the highest proficiency in it. He used to instruct his disciple in religion like Vasiṣṭha. The place where he fixed his abode was adorned with fruits and flowers, lotus ponds, and beautiful forests. It was full of peacocks and antelopes. Here several hermits used to observe religious practices and perform religious sacrifices with *soma* juice. They looked upon *dharma* as their only wealth. Some princes of the Ikṣvāku family came to this abode to lead a forest life. Their body was like a golden pillar and their breast was like that of a lion. They had strong arms but they were endowed with grace and humbleness. Sage Kapila became their teacher. The princes became known as Śākyas, because they built a city here and lived in it surrounded by the Śāka trees. After Kapila went to heaven they killed elephants and tigers. The hermits seeing their nature left the forest and took shelter in the Himalayan mountain. The princes became sorrowful knowing that the hermits left the place. They got many wealth buried in the earth and afterwards built a beautiful city surrounded by a wide moat, having large roads and high walls like Girivraja, the capital of Magadha. This city also contained beautiful mansions and well-built houses.¹ They appointed capable, wealthy and honest relatives as royal officers, and ministers. They also built many beautiful gardens, ponds, and mote-halls with wells on all sides. This city was full of elephants, horses, and chariots. Nobody was proud of his wisdom and strength. There was no hidden treasure. It was an abode of learning and affluence. Here lived the virtuous and the learned. People were not oppressed by unlawful taxes and this was the reason why it became very populous. The city became known as Kapilavāstu because it was built in the hermitage of the sage Kapila, just as the city of Kākandī was built in the hermitage of Kakanda, and Mākandī in that of Makanda, and Kauśāmbī in that of Kuśāmba. Here the princes became famous on account of their absence of pride and strength befitting an Aryan. They were very much attached to their eldest brother who began to rule righteously like an overlord being surrounded by his brothers.

King Śuddhodana, father of Sarvāthasiddha and Nanda, was the most illustrious scion of the Śākya race to whom the Śākya realm passed by lineal succession. He was unattached to worldly passions; the accession to sovereignty did not make him insolent, nor did prosperity make him despise others. He was strong and resolute, learned in the sacred lore, wise and brave, invincible before the foe, skilled in counsel, steadfast and

¹ Cf. *Jinacarita*, vv. 66-67.

gracious.¹ He was handsome yet unpretentious, courteous yet straightforward, courageous yet forbearing, masterly yet without arrogance. He was backward neither in bravery nor in liberality. He eagerly trod the traditional path of righteousness, earnestly dedicating himself to his kingly duties. Owing to his wise rule, excellent administration and efficient protection, his subjects lived peacefully and without fear. He stood as a living example of virtue and piety to the people. When he made a promise he meant to keep it and from the path of truth he never swerved but adhered to it even at the cost of life. Resplendent with self-control, glowing with virtue, and pleasing he was to the cultured. As a typical Indo-Aryan king, he regularly studied the Vedas, drank *soma* according to ritual and befittingly guarded his fame. As he was the invincible king of the Śākya, the vassal princes were all submissive to him. He was fully possessed of all kingly might and majesty, virtues and powers. By his conduct as a royal seer he increased the fame of his family and spread abroad his ancestors' good name. He had for his advisers the best of the ministers, and his selection of the officers was always a happy one. Himself an unwearied worshipper in due season, he caused the sacrificial ground to be laid out, and he enabled the Brahmins to meditate on Brahman without any hindrance.

The god-like king had for his chief queen Māyā, a veritable Śacī, who was in beauty like Padmā (lotus, according to the Chinese version), in steadiness like the earth, and incomparable like the goddess Māyā. She was of a pure nature, and free from anger, illusion and pride. According to Cowell's edition of the *Buddhacarita*, she behaved as a mother to the subjects. She was faithful in her duties to the superiors, and stood like the goddess of Luck in the Royal House. She kept the religious vows and the lovely forest suited to trance had a special fascination for her. It was in the womb of such a mother that the Bodhisattva, destined to be the Buddha and the saviour of mankind, took his birth. But the king had another queen, the younger one, Gautamī by name of whom was born prince Nanda. The king who was a loving and dutiful father stood between his two sons like the Middle Country placed between the Himalayas and the Pāripātra mountains.²

Thus the difference aptly suggested between the dispositions and attainments of two brothers, sons of the same father, is one between the highest mountain range of the Himalaya and the much lesser range of the Pāripātra. The elder brother, prince Sarvārthasiddha, was destined to attain Buddhahood, to found the kingdom of righteousness, and to lead gods and men along the right path to salvation, while the younger brother was destined to attain Arhatship under the training and guidance and instruction of his brother, teacher and loving *guru*. The elder brother was by his nature averse to the enjoyment of worldly pleasures, while the younger brother was passionately fond of them and inordinately attached to his wife.

Before, at and after his birth, prince Sarvārthasiddha had all things extraordinary about him. He agreed to descend on the earth from the Tusita heaven in response to an earnest supplication of the gods and angels. From his birth his father, king Śuddhodana, gradually grew mightier in the

¹ Cf. *Jinacarita*, v. 68.

² The range of Aśvaghōṣa's movements seems to have confined to the Middle Country placed between the Himavat and the Pāripātra (*Saundarananda*, II, 62), the Himavat on the north, the Vindhyaśaṭha (*Buddhacarita*, VII, 54), Vindhya-pādas (B., XIII, 38) and the Pāripātra on the west and the Girivraja on the east.

possession of riches, strength of the army and allies. The royal city had richly decked horses, the kingdom came to have many excellent cows in abundant milk, the king's enemies became neutrals, the heaven rained in due time and place, the plenty of crops was harvested, all were free from want, none was poverty-stricken save and except the ascetics whose mortification of the flesh was a self-inflicted penance. Just as in the kingdom of Yayāti, son of Nahuṣa, so in the Śākya territory none was disrespectful to the elders, irreligious, deceitful or hurting. Here none was lacking in generosity. All signs of aggression, invasion, lawlessness and immorality disappeared. At the prince's birth in the kingdom of Śuddhodana, as in that of Manu Vaiśvata, joy prevailed, evil perished, piety blazed forth and sin was quenched. The immensity of the power of his newly born son, like that of a divine seer, was such that queen Māyā was unable to bear the joy it caused her; she thereupon went to Heaven to dwell there, not to say, she died.

The gentleness and outspokenness of nature is the common trait of the two brothers. Nevertheless, one of them could in no way be persuaded to keep entreaties of others and the other could be easily persuaded to do so. Thus from the worldly point of view one was disobliging and the other obliging. Prince Siddhārtha was in the pleasure-garden with his companion, Udāyin, son of his father's chaplain, who was well versed in the science of erotics and politics. There the youthful damsels and opera girls made open overtures of sexual passion and advances of love. They were skilled in all the arts, adepts at captivating the feelings, possessed of beauty and charm, and pre-eminent in their endowments. With these gifts they might even grace the northern Kurus and the pleasanee of Vaiśravaṇa Kubera. They could shake even lust-free seers and captivate the gods. The bodily form of the royal prince was so perfect, the glory of the brilliant signs of his person was so dazzling, benignity and gravity in his looks were such that these damsels approached him with their eyes wide open in wonder, welcoming him respectfully, with hands folded like lotus-buds. They stood around him with their minds absorbed in love, deeming him to be the god of love in bodily form, or the moon down on earth with the rays veiled. They made gestures to cause rapture with brows, looks and blandishments, with laughter, frolicking and movements. Udāyin pleaded on behalf of the women, saying, 'courtesy is the balm of women, courtesy is the best of ornaments; beauty without courtesy is like a grove without flowers. What is the good of courtesy only? Accept them with genuine feeling.' ¹ Udāyin's pleadings were not without reproach for the prince's coldness and callousness. The prince listened to his words, supported by scriptural tradition, and replied to him, saying, 'It is not that I despise the objects of sense and I know that the world is devoted to them; but my mind does not delight in them, because I hold them to be transitory. If the triad of old age, disease and death did not exist, I too should take my pleasure in the ravishing objects of sense.' ²

When Siddhārtha after renunciation saw the hermitage of Bhārgava with the deer sleeping in perfect trust and the birds sitting at peace, he alighted from his horse to show honour to asceticism and in accordance with his politeness. With the gait of a lion he entered that arena of a deer, himself like a deer. At the sight of him, the lamp of the Ikṣvāku race, shining like the rising sun, the inmates of the hermitage felt amazed as it seemed to them as if the Eighth Vasu or one of the Āsvins came down to earth. When the chief of the ascetics requested him to dwell there and

¹ *Buddhacarita*, IV, 70-71.

² *Ibid.*, IV, 85-86.

his disciples left nothing to be desired as regards hospitality, the princely ascetic spoke these words, gracious and significant, very gentle yet determined and dignified: 'When I reflect that I am about to go away, leaving you thus engaged, who are so hospitable and have shown me such very great kindness, I feel indeed as much grief as I did when quitting my kinsfolk. But your *dharma* aims at Paradise, while my desire is for release from rebirth and leads me not to wish to dwell in this grove. For the *dharma* of cessation from activity is apart from the continuance of active being. It is not for dissatisfaction on my part or for an offence committed by anyone else that I am going forth from this grove; for you are all like the great seers, in that you take your stand on a *dharma* that conforms with the primeval ages.'¹

The chief minister and chaplain of king Śuddhodana set out for the forest in search of the Śākya prince. They saw him sitting on the road at the foot of a tree blazing with his form like the sun when it is in the midst of a circle of cloud. They paid him due honour, as Sukra and Āṅgīrasa did to the mighty Indra in heaven, which was duly reciprocated. They sat down with his permission on either side of the banner of the Śākya race and close to him, resembling the twin stars of Punarvasu in conjunction with the moon. They persuaded him, though in vain, to return to Kapilavāstu, making their entreaties on the strength of the arguments based on worldly wisdom and the pangs of separation felt by his father, foster-mother, wife and son, other members of the royal household and the citizens of the royal capital. He listened to their words, and made an excellent and courteous reply in these words: 'I am fully aware of the feelings fathers have for their sons, more especially that which the king has for me; but though I know it, I am afraid of disease, old age and death and have no alternative but to quit my kindred. For, if in the end there were not parting from one's dear ones, who would not wish to see his dear kinsfolk?'²

The firmness of his resolve is significantly expressed in the following terms: 'I may not have seen yet the final truth, the reality of good and evil may be in dispute, and yet my decision is to follow the good. For better is the toil, though vainly, of the man who pursues the good. The scriptural tradition is uncertain. The instances of Rāma and others, quoted to justify my return, do not prove your case. Such being the case, the sun may fall to the earth, Mount Himavat may lose its firmness, but I will not return as a worldly man who has not beheld the final truth and whose senses are attracted by the objects of pleasure. I would rather enter a blazing fire than return home with the goal unattained.'³

The self-same traits of Siddhārtha's nature and character are set out and emphasized in and through his interesting conversation with king Bimbisāra.⁴ The king of Magadha is introduced as one who was 'in heroism the peer of Pāṇdu's son, in stature like a mountain, a lion-man with the gait of a lion'. The Bodhisattva appeared to him to be 'as it were a peak of the mountain and shining like the moon rising out of a bower of clouds,' seated 'in the majesty of his beauty and in holy tranquillity, like some being magically projected by *Dharma*'. When Bimbisāra spoke to him with a friendly face and in most cordial terms, the son of Śuddhodana paid all the compliments due to a noble scion of the Haryāṅka family, but he did not fail to conclude his effective reply with these pregnant words expressive of the same resoluteness of his will: 'I have not entered the forest because of any anger nor have I cast aside my diadem because of enemy arrows,

¹ *Buddhacarita*, VII, 47-49.

² *Ibid.*, IX, 75-79.

³ *Buddhacarita kāvya*, IX, 31-32.

⁴ Cf. *Suttanipāta*, *Pabbajā Sutta*.

nor have I set my ambitions on loftier enjoyments, that I decline this proposal of yours. But I deem the highest goal of a man to be the stage in which there is neither old age, nor fear, nor disease, nor birth, nor death, nor anxieties, and in which there is not continuous renewal of activity.'

Although the germ of saintship was in prince Nanda, he was weak-minded and lacking in determination. But he was naturally so polite and courteous that when his elder brother, now the Buddha, asked him to come along carrying his bowl, he could not say no. The Buddha appeared at his door for alms when Nanda was spending his days merrily with his beautiful wife in a seven-storied house. A young maid saw the Blessed One going away without alms and told Nanda about it. Nanda had to leave his wife to go to the Buddha. But he and his wife were so much attached to each other—like a Kinnara couple, that it was difficult for him to remain away from her; his mind was occupied all along with the thoughts of her. He was ordained, nevertheless, as a mendicant. When asked, he did not conceal the fact about his inner longing to return to his wife. When he was shown the ravishing youth and soul-captivating beauty of the heavenly damsels (the *Apsarās*) in the Nandana grove, his interest was shifted from his wife to them. He began to lead the religious life and practise virtue for the sake of the heavenly nymphs. When Ānanda enquired of him if this was true, Nanda was shocked at heart. He heaved a deep sigh with downcast looks and a change of countenance betraying the emotions of his mind. 'From your demeanour I understand', said Ānanda, upbraiding him, 'why you follow the Law and knowing that, I am moved to laughter and compassion at the same time. You are striving to assume self-control for the sake of passion; it is as if a man were to carry about a heavy stone on his shoulder to sit down on. Just as a savage ram draws back in order to charge, so you are following the holy life for an object which is contrary to it.' Nanda felt highly ashamed when he was thus upbraided by his first cousin Ānanda for following the Law to get the nymphs. Though the passion of love predominated in him, he was not used to such ridicule. A great change for the better was brought about in him, his longings were diverted from Paradise. Seeing the nymphs he forgot his wife, and now he gave up the nymphs knowing them to be transitory as objects of pleasure.

Gautamī,¹ the aunt and step-and-foster mother of prince Siddhārtha, Yaśodharā, his wife, Sundarī, the wife of his younger step-brother, the maids of honour, the courtezans and opera-girls, the heavenly courtezans, and dancing girls are delineated by Āsvaghoṣa all in their purely womanly character. They are all loving and tender-hearted, sentimental and emotional. The lamentation is with them the natural mode of expression of their feelings, whether of affection, sorrow or separation.

At the departure of the prince to embrace the ascetic life and to wander alone, Gautamī's eyes became restless with despair. Unable to maintain self-control, she wailed aloud, like an osprey that has lost its nestlings. She swooned and her exclamations were all with a bestrewn face. She dwelt on the delicate forms of the prince's body and keenly felt for his physical discomforts, privations and pains. She touched his virtues as a man, the nobility of his race, his goodness, strength, beauty, learning, majesty and youth. The tears were contagious and sympathetic. Her piteous ravings drew tears in the eyes of other women in the palace who clasped one another with their arms, letting fall tears from their eyes, like shaken creepers that drop honey from their flowers.

¹ Cf. *Therīgāthā—Commentary*, pp. 140–147.

Then came the turn of Yaśodharā who fell disconsolate on the ground¹ like a Brahminy duck without its mate. In her distress she uttered all sorts of lamentation with a voice choked up by sobs. 'If he wishes to carry out *dharma*', she complained, 'and yet casts me off, his lawful partner in the duties of religion and now husbandless, in what respect is there *dharma* for him who wishes to follow austerities separated from his lawful partner?'² The true sentiment of a loving and dutiful wife was expressed when she wailed, saying, 'My heart too is certainly exceeding hard, made of stone or even of iron, in that it does not break in its orphaned state, when my lord, accustomed to all pleasures, has departed to the forests, without his royal glory'.³ Thus she fainted with grief for her husband, wept and brooded and lamented repeatedly. Thereupon other women around her mourned all aloud with tears on their faces. When Siddhārtha as a completely changed religious personality, as a perfect Buddha, revisited the Śākya royal city and Śuddhodana's royal palace, she did not enquire of her father-in-law if he had seen his son or not. But as she saw his beauteous person, she was much struck by his altered form which was then that of a hermit, and gracefully described to her child, Rāhula, the divine beauty and majesty of all the attractive marks that adorned his person, the marks of a 'great man' which would have gone to make him a universal monarch, had he chosen to remain in the world.

Sundarī was peerless among women as Nanda among men for their entrancing beauty. It seemed as if the creator had made them to surprise mortals. She stood like a divinity wandering in the Nandana grove, while Nanda was the cause of joy to his family. Three names she bore: Sundarī for her majesty and handsomeness, Mānini for her obstinacy and pride, and Bhāmini for her extreme beauty in love and for her spirit. She was like a lotus-pond in her womanly form with her laughter for the swans. She became restless as her dear husband did not come in time and she herself said thus: 'Oh lord, you are always afraid of me, you are very much attached to me. How is it that you have become so very indifferent to me? You may have fallen in love with another beautiful woman.' While she was thus lamenting, a lady entered into her room with fear, and with tears in her eyes spoke thus: 'As a cakravāka bird knows only its darling cakravākī, so he does not know any woman except you. He likes household life only for your sake and just to please you he desires to live. His brother, the Blessed Tathāgata, has ordained him.' Sundarī on hearing these words stood up and began to tremble. She cried in loud voice lifting up both her arms. Her eyes became red due to excessive crying. She threw away her ornaments and became very much restless. She could not find peace. She became tired, remained silent, and lamented much. The ladies who used to live near her palace became much grieved seeing her crying. An elderly lady embraced her and removed tears from her eyes; she then said thus: 'It is not fair to lament for the reason that the husband has taken shelter in *Dharma*. Asceticism is the ancestral property of the Ikṣvāku kings; it is not unknown to you that many wives of Śākya sages gave up their worldly life for the sake of salvation.'⁴

The Nandana is the pleasure grove of Indra, the bearer of the thunder-bolt. The Pārijāta tree shines there with all its majesty. Of other trees, some put forth blossoms in their season, some in all seasons, some bear sweet-smelling garlands and wreaths of various kinds, some look like candelabra adorned with red lotuses. All the trees provide enjoyment for

¹ Cf. *Lalitavistara*, Chap. 15.

² *Ibid.*, VIII, 69.

³ *Buddhacarita*, VIII, 61.

⁴ *Saundarananda*, Canto VI, 39-40.

the dwellers in heaven. Of the birds, some have beaks of the hue of red arsenic, crystal-like eyes, dark brown wings, and feet of the colour of red madder and half white. There are other varieties of wonderful birds. The amorous nymphs are full of joy and ravishing beauty. The grove is ever joyful, free from sorrow and grief, and all are youthful there. It appears to be a world which is in perpetual feast and free from exhaustion, drowsiness, disgust, disease or grief. Compared with it, the world of men looks no better than a cemetery, it being subject to disease, decay and death, affliction and grief.

The Śākya city of Kapilavāstu became joyful at the arrival of Siddhārtha as the Enlightened One. It became free from epidemic or disaster, like the city of Kuru, or of Raghu, or of Puru. No one experienced any danger from himself or from others or from fate. All rejoiced there as in the golden age of Manu, in happiness, plenty and virtue. King Śuddhodana obtained the first fruit of holy life. Many Śākya nobles renounced the world; those who were unable to do so owing to their affection for their children or parents, undertook to observe the precepts of conduct. The poor and the indigent abstained from coveting the wealth of others and stealing the goods of others. The rich lived a life free from lust and other passions. All were compassionate to all, never thinking of hurting anybody. They grasped the sound doctrine, all became free from questionings and held the highest and purest views.

Māra¹ is the supreme ruler of the world where passions have their free play, and beings are all subject to disease, decay and death. He is the flower-arrowed god of love (*Kāmadeva*) who is the sworn enemy of the good law and liberation. Caprice (*Vibhrama*), gaiety (*Harṣa*) and wantonness (*Darpa*) are his three sons, and discontent (*Arati*), delight (*Rati*) and thirst (*Trṣṇā*) are his three daughters.² His army consists of his followers who appear in many ghastly forms and carry various weapons. Some have the faces of boars, fishes, horses, asses, and camels or the countenances of tigers, lions, and elephants; some are one-eyed, many-mouthed, three-headed with pendulous and speckled bellies. Some are without knees or thighs, or with pot-sized knees, or armed with tusks or talons, with skulls for faces, with many bodies or mutilated faces. All conceivable ugly, horrible and terrific shapes, forms and countenances are given to them. All grimaces, frownings, frightening, hurlings, brandishings, wild orgies are described as their characteristic actions. Māra is a stubborn fighter and artful at the same time. All means he tries from the hurling of rocks and mountains down to coaxing and cajoling, enticing and softening to keep all under his sway. His daughters are the bewitchers of hearts of men, his sons are generators of violent passions in them, while his forces are suckers of the vital essence and of the mind. His exhortation to the Śākya prince whose mind was bent on the immortal state of *nirvāṇa* was: 'Follow your own (traditional path of) *dharma*, give up the *dharma* of liberation. Subdue the world both with arrows and with sacrifices, and from the world obtain the world of Vāsava.'³

The world (*jagat*) is without substance or certainty. It goes to an evil end. Since it is transitory, strength is not durable. One may cynically ask where is the strength of Kārtavīrya, the thousand-armed Arjuna? Where is the strength of Kṛṣṇa, the slayer of Kāṁsa? Where is the

¹ Vide B. C. Law, The Buddhist Conception of Māra, *Buddhistic Studies*, Chapter X, pp. 257 foll.

² *Buddhistic Studies* (Ed. B. C. Law), p. 259; *Niddesa*, I, 96; *Suttanipāṭa—Padhāna Sutta*.

³ *Buddhacarita*, XIII, 9.

strength of Namuci, the son of Diti, or of the Kurus, or of those mighty ones who boasted of their heroism and strength? Here what holds true of strength holds equally true of the beauty of bodily form, wealth, possession, prosperity, and happiness. Both in this world and hereafter passion is the cause of suffering only and does not stand for anyone's advantage. Here inevitably all phenomena come into being from not-being and pass away again from being into not-being and since they all have a cause and that is a transitory one, the world is impermanent (*anityam*). Since the union with *karman* of whatever is born is continually operative, and it is the cause of bondage and destruction, the mundane existence is suffering (*duḥkham*). Since the individual is a mere creature of the *samskāras*¹ and there is neither agent nor knower, and gliding in the cycle of painful existence follows from the conjuncture of circumstances, the world is devoid of entity (*śūnyam*). Since the world has no motive force of its own, nor is it dependent on itself, since there is no single being who has paramountcy over actions, and states of being follow from other states, the world is without soul (*nirātmakam*). *Samsāra*² means the gliding of individuals in the cycle of repeated births and deaths led by craving which is rooted in ignorance. As long as this gliding continues, calamities of many sorts, old age and the rest are produced. The existence of the body is attended with disease, decay and death, hunger and thirst, heat and cold, while the existence of mind with its concomitants involves suffering such as grief, dejection, anger, fear and the like. Suffering and nothing but suffering is the fate of corporeality. It is *Nirvāṇa* that stands in contrast to the world. *Nirodha*,³ *nirmokṣa*,⁴ *nirvṛti*,⁵ and *nirveda*⁶ are its different synonyms. The end of suffering follows from the exhaustion of the cause of it. *Nirvāṇa*⁷ is the blissful, peaceful element,—the refuge which is free from the passion of craving. It makes all *bhavas* leading to pain subside. It is the salvation which is eternal, unassailable, and noble. It means the cessation of the whole of suffering. It is that supreme state in which there is neither birth, nor decay, nor disease, nor death, nor contact with what is disagreeable, neither disappointment nor separation from what is agreeable. It is that state which is tranquil, final and imperishable.⁸ Just a lamp extinguishes for ever from the exhaustion of the oil and does not depart to the earth or the sky or any of the quarters, so the saint who has reached *nirvāṇa*, does not come back to the earth.⁹ In his case the salvation means the exhaustion of corrupting factors; it is tranquillity only. By extinguishing the blazing fire of the passions with the water of steadfastness, the saint comes to the highest happiness, like a man descending into a cool pool in the hot weather. There is no more for him anything which is agreeable or disagreeable, liking or disliking; he feels joy because of their absence. Like one who has obtained safety after a great danger, or deliverance from great oppression, or light in darkness, or the safe shore, or like one who has gained in health after an unbearable illness, or release from a great debt, or escape from the face of a chasing enemy, or plenty after scarcity, the saint comes to supreme state of peace.

¹ Saṅkhāras of Pali Buddhism. Cf. *Kathāvatthu*, 395; *Visuddhimagga*, 530ff; *Majjhima*, III, 99; *Digha*, II, 157; II, 193, etc., etc.

² B. C. Law, *Concepts of Buddhism*, pp. 82-83.

³ *S.*, XVI, 26. *Nirodha* is that of the self in which consciousness transcends the sphere of senses and their objects. B. C. Law, *Concepts of Buddhism*, p. 29.

⁴ *S.*, V, 15; VIII, 62; XVIII, 16.

⁵ *S.*, XVI, 29.

⁶ *Ibid.*, 44.

⁷ For a detailed exposition, vide B. C. Law, *Concepts of Buddhism*, pp. 76ff.

⁸ *Saundarananda*, XVI, 27.

⁹ *Ibid.*, XVI, 28-29.

In the Noble Eightfold Path as propounded by the Buddha lies the sure way to *nirvāṇa* or salvation. It is just another name for the Middle Path which discards the two extreme courses of life, one consisting in the practice of self-mortification and the other in a free indulgence in sensual pleasures. Neither of them affords us the way to the highest wisdom, nor do they bring us to true release. The first is violent and destructive of its own purpose by its extreme rigour. The second is like the way of a sickly man who eats food, not fit to eat. Of the eight factors that constitute the Noble Eightfold Path, ¹ right speech, right action and right livelihood are to be practised in the sphere of conduct for the mastery of the actions (*śīlāśrayaṃ karma-parigrahāya*); right view, right resolve and right effort are to be practised in the sphere of knowledge for the destruction of passions causing affliction (*prajñāśrayaṃ kleśa-parikṣayāya*), and right mindfulness and right concentration are to be practised in the sphere of tranquillity for the control of mind (*samāśrayaṃ citta-parigrahāya*). Thus the Noble Eightfold Path involves, on the whole, the threefold practice of *śīla*, *samā* (i.e. *samādhi*) and *prajñā*. Broadly speaking it is the development of the five controlling faculties and powers called *śraddhā* (faith), *vīrya* (energy), *smṛti* (mindfulness), *samādhi* (concentration), ² and *prajñā* ³ (knowledge). The central idea behind all these is the practice of *Yoga* or meditation without which neither the highest happiness nor the highest knowledge is attainable.

Śīla ⁴ is good behaviour or conduct of a person in accordance with the precepts laid down. In the absence of such behaviour or conduct there can be no proper life either for a mendicant or for a householder. It is therefore meet to live the holy life which is attended with good conduct, keeping firmly to one's vows and perceiving the danger in the smallest of faults. It is by taking one's stand on good conduct that all actions in the sphere of the supreme good are possible. It is the moral foundation of the higher life. Salvation is possible through freedom from passion, this freedom through right understanding, right understanding through intuition, and vision, these through concentration, concentration through mental and bodily ease, ease through stillness, stillness through joy, joy through joyousness, joyousness through a clear conscience in the matter of deeds, and this through the purity of morals. Good behaviour or moral conduct implies moral discipline which comes from habitual practice, habitual practice from keen desire for a thing and this from dependence on it. Moral conduct is the refuge, the guide as it were in the wilderness, the friend, the kinsman, the protector, wealth and strength.

If good behaviour or moral conduct is the outer expression of an interval state of mind centred in self-control, this control is possible through *Yoga* which enables us to hold back the senses from their objects and to reach tranquillity through concentration, while *prajñā* enables us to grasp the true nature of things and that of the way of escape from all that bind us

¹ B. C. Law, *Concepts of Buddhism* (Kern Institute Monograph), pp. 34-36.

² In *samādhi* all thoughts are simultaneously and rightly centred on a particular subject. Its characteristic is absence of distraction, its immediate cause is firmness and its remote cause is happiness. Regarding purity and impurity of *samādhi*, vide B. C. Law, *Concepts of Buddhism*, pp. 38ff.

³ It is *paññā* of Pali Buddhism, which may also be translated as wisdom. According to Mahāyāna Buddhists, the nature of *Dharma* is the perfection of wisdom. Being free from darkness of ignorance one should practice *prajñā-pāramitā*—Suzuki, *Outlines of Mahāyāna Buddhism*, p. 69; cf. *Dhammasaṅgani*, 16; *Dīgha*, I, 62ff; *Suttanipāta*, 77, 329, etc., etc.

⁴ *Vinaya*, II, 162; *Saṃyutta*, IV, 342; *Saṃyutta*, II, 68; *Mūlinda*, 333; *Aṅguttara*, IV, 248ff.

to the world. The real urge to the higher and progressive life comes from *śraddhā*¹ meaning faith, belief, confidence as well as aspiration. Just as a man begins to dig the earth only when he believes that there is water underneath and he has need of it, or rubs the fire-stick only when he has need of fire and believes in its existence in the firestick, or sows seed in the soil only when he believes in the growth of corn there and feels need of it, so he begins to cherish the longing for the Law only when he sincerely believes in the growth of higher life through it and feels its need. Faith may be called the Hand since it grasps the Good Doctrine of itself, as a hand receives a gift. It is described as the faculty because of its paramountcy in control, as strength because of its steadfastness, and as wealth since it places us above the want of virtue. It is to be called the Reed-arrow because of its power of protecting the Law and the Jewel. It is indeed the seed from which the highest good originates and the river which cleanses us from sins. With the growth of faith grows the Law, as a tree grows with the growth of its root. But as long as the truth is not seen or heard, so long faith does not become strong and firm. When along with self-control the real truth is seen, the tree of faith bears fruit and becomes the vehicle of progress.

Energy (*vīrya*) which is released after the seed of faith is sown in the proper soil is of the greatest import. It is the means by which one may proceed to accomplish what is to be done. Without energy nothing can be accomplished, all success in the world is due to energy. Where there is no energy, there is no acquisition of what has not been acquired, and there is, on the other hand, the loss of what has been acquired. Indolence or lethargy is the cause of man's degradation. It leads him to a lower plane of existence. Indolence is the hindrance to a man's progress in life. A man gets water if he digs the earth with incessant energy. He produces fire from the fire-sticks by continuous friction. It is by ploughing the soil, and by guarding the field with great pain that a man harvests a splendid crop. By diving strenuously into the ocean the diver collects splendid jewels to rejoice over. Energy must, therefore, be displayed for the sake of tranquillity which is the ultimate goal of the holy life.²

The term *smṛti* stands for the practice of mindfulness or mental awareness by a Yogin. It requires the aspirant to be fully conscious of all his actions, experiences, feelings, thoughts and the like. It requires him to fix his attention on all his bodily movements, deportments and postures. He is to guard his thoughts in all circumstances. Loss of attention makes us off the guard. It is attention that enables a person to go after all the virtues, moral discipline, and the like. The everlasting good is lost to a person if his attention is distracted. A man without attention proceeds aimlessly. Concentration (*samādhi*) and knowledge (*prajñā*) result both from the practice of *Yoga*. Concentration leads to the tranquillity of mind and through knowledge the Yogin has the true apprehension of the nature of the four noble truths. Here one is auxiliary to the other. A passionate man, who has not attained tranquillity of feelings, fails to find the Path. An enquiring man who has not perceived the truth and is obsessed with the presentation of sensual objects, cannot easily restrain his mind.

With the heart appeased and serene, a yogin reaches discrimination. The surest way of salvation lies through a thorough grasp of the four

¹ *Dīgha*, I, 63; III, 164 foll.; *Saṃyutta*, I, 172; *Aṅguttara*, I, 150, 210; *Milinda*, 34ff; *Aṅguttara*, II, 149.

² *Saundarananda*, XVI, 94-98.

noble truths. There is suffering which is continuous and whose essence is affliction; there is the cause of suffering whose essence is origination; there is the destruction of suffering whose essence is escape, and there is the path to tranquillity whose essence is rescuing.¹ A man attains tranquillity and is not born again by understanding with his intellect the four noble truths, and penetrating to their core, he overcomes all the infections by the cultivation of meditation.² Birth is the cause of suffering. It is the root of the afflictions, old age, etc.; for as the earth is the place where all plants grow, so birth is the place where all calamities grow. As food, whether good or bad in itself, tends to destruction, not to the support of life, when mixed with poison; so all birth in this world, whether among animals or above or below, tends to suffering, not to pleasure.³ As wind has its birthplace in the air, as fire lies in the womb of the *śamī* wood, as water lies inside the earth, so suffering has its birthplace in the mind and body.⁴ The existence of the body involves suffering such as disease, old age, etc., and hunger, thirst, rain, heat and cold, etc., and the existence of the mind with its concomitants, when incorporated in matter, involves suffering such as grief, dejection, anger, fear, etc.⁵ The cause of this suffering from active being (*bhava*) in this world is to be found in the category of the vices such as craving and the rest, not in a Creator or Primordial Matter or Time or the Nature of Things or Fate or Chance.⁶ And for this reason it is to be known that the active being (*bhava*) of the world proceeds from the vices, so that those who are subject to passion and to mental darkness are subject to death and he who is devoid of them is not born again.⁷ Therefore the causes of birth in its many forms are desire, etc., and so they must be eradicated in order to ensure freedom from suffering. The cessation of suffering proceeds from exhaustion of the cause. One should, therefore, render present for himself the holy, peaceful element, the refuge which is free from the passion of desire and brings suppression, the salvation which is eternal, unassailable, and holy. The means to attain salvation is the Path with its threefold wisdom and double tranquillity. It should be duly cultivated by the prudent man, governing himself by the pure threefold discipline.

By entering on this straight, noble, incorruptible Path with its three divisions and eight members, one eliminates the faults which are the causes of suffering and reaches the supremely blessed stage. In following it are required steadfastness, simple-mindedness, self-respect, heedfulness, and discrimination, desire for little, contentment and lack of attachment, patience and dislike of mundane activity. He who perceives suffering as it really is, its origin and its destruction, attains peace by the Noble Path and associates himself with the Aryans. One should, therefore, in the first instance, think of suffering as disease, in the second instance, of the faults as the cause of disease, thirdly of the destruction of suffering as good health, and fourthly of the Path as the medicine.

¹ *Saundarananda*, XVI, 4; cf. *Visuddhimagga* (P.T.S.), 495-496.

² *Ibid.*, canto XVI, 4-5.

³ *Ibid.*, XVI, 7, 9.

⁴ *Ibid.*, II.

⁵ *Ibid.*, XVI, 11, 13.

⁶ *Ibid.*, XVI, 17.

⁷ *Ibid.*, 17-18.

INDEX

- Abhayagiri monks, 15
 Abhidharmakośa, 10
 Abhiññāna Śakuntalam, 23
 Abhiniskramapāsūtra, 17
 Abhyāsayoga, 59
 Agastya, 17
 Agrapudgala, 60
 Ahalyā, 19, 36
 Akṣamālā, 37
 Amarakośa, 23
 Ambālikā, 18
 Ambariṣa, 17
 Amitābha, 3
 Amitāyus sūtra, 3
 Amṛtānanda, 26
 Andhaka-Vṛṣṇis, 37
 Anesaki, 1, 11
 Āṅgiras, 70
 Apadāna, 47, 62
 Arāda, 17, 72
 Arthasāstra, 47, 63, 64
 Aśoka, 6, 63
 Assagutta, 7, 14
 Āsvaghōsa, 1, 12, 15, 17, 21, 35, 37, 42, 69, 74, 81
 Atthasālinī, 52, 71
 Avalokiteśvara, 6
 Ayodhyā, 61
 Ānanda, 81
 Āṅgiraśa, 17
 Āryadeva, 4
 Āryāvarta, 8, 12
 Ātreya, 21
 Bahuśrutikas, 15, 55
 Balmont, 2
 Barua, B. M., 37, 39, 42, 57, 61, 71
 Baston, M. A., 32, 33
 Bāhulikas, 15
 Baudhāyana, 12, 61
 Beal, Samuel, 1, 5, 27
 Bhagavadgītā, 35, 50, 72
 Bhāminī, 82
 Bhandari, 2, 26
 Bhandarkar, D. R., 39
 Bhandarkar, R. G., 40
 Bhārgava, 18, 79
 Bhāsa, 23
 Bhartṛhari, 49
 Bhīṣma, 19
 Bimbisāra, 80
 Bodhipakṣikadharmā, 74
 Bōhtlingk, 1, 50
 Brahmanirvāṇa, 67
 Brhaspati, 21
 Buddhacarita, 1, 17, 20, 26, 28, 30, 41
 Buddhaghōsa, 13
 Buddhistic Studies, 57
 Burnouf, E., 9
 Byodo, 1
 Caitraratha, 18
 Cappeller, C., 1, 26
 Caraka, 5
 Carakasamhitā, 5
 Cariyāpiṭaka, 47
 Cārudatta, 34
 Ceylon, 59
 Chakravartī, Chintaharan, 2
 Chandana Kaṇiṣṭha, 5
 Cowell, 1, 20, 26, 27
 Cūlavamsa, 13
 Cunningham, 12
 Daṇḍa-nīti, 21
 Dāṇḍakya Bhoja, 36
 Daśaduṣṭakarmamārgasūtra, 2
 Daśakuśalakarmapathanirdeśa, 3
 Daśaratha, 21, 64
 Dhammanagara, 62
 Dhammapada, 60, 74, 76
 Dhammapadaṭṭhakathā, 60
 Dharmagupta sect, 6, 7
 Dharmagupta, 16, 17
 Dharmarakṣita, 13
 Dharmasamuccaya, 74
 Dhārmikasubhūti, 3
 Dhātupāṭha, 40
 Dilīpa, 37
 Dipavamsa, 16, 39
 Discourse on the Awakening of faith in the Mahāyāna, 2
 Divyāvadāna, 9
 Duḥkha, 75, 84
 Dvaipāyana, 18, 37, 51, 54, 65
 Fā-Hien, 5, 7
 Finot, L., 26
 Formichi, C., 1, 26
 Fo-sho-hing-tsan-king, 37, 56, 71
 Gandhāra, 5, 6, 15
 Gaṇḍistotra, 3, 9
 Gaṅgā, 18
 Gauda, 6
 Gautamī, Mahāpajāpati, 64, 81
 Gavāmpati, 70
 Gawronski, 1, 9
 Ghaṭacetiḱā, 8
 Ghṛtāci, 37, 47
 Girivraja, 62, 77
 Gokulikas, 15
 Gopatha Brāhmaṇa, 12
 Gr̥dhrakūṭa, 56
 Gurner, C. W., 1, 26, 32, 36, 43
 Guruvāda, 60
 Harivamśa, 18
 Harṣa, 34
 Haryāṇkakula, 80
 Himalaya, 12, 77
 Hsien Tsang, 4
 Hodgson, B. H., 9
 Hopkins, E. W., 39
 Hüber, E., 1, 33
 Hultzsck, E., 1

- Indra, 8, 36, 62
 Indriya, 75
 Indriyasamvara, 74
 Indumatī, 26
 I-tsing, 3, 8

 Jacobi, H., 1
 Jambudvīpa, 61
 Janaka, 18, 62
 Jayadeva, 20
 Jalandhara, 5
 Jātaka, 61
 Jātakanidānakathā, 37
 Jñānaprasthāna śāstra, 4
 Joglekar, 2, 26
 Johnston, E. H., 26, 27, 40

 Kaikeyī, 20
 Kaṇḍakā, 12
 Kalpanālakṣṇikā, 9
 Kalpanāmaṇḍitīkā, 9
 Kammaṇḍisaraṇā, 68
 Kaṇḍika, 4, 5, 6, 7, 13, 16, 21, 31
 Kapila, 24, 62, 77
 Kapilavāstu, 20, 61, 62
 Karāla-Vaideha, 36
 Karmayoga, 59
 Kashmir, 5, 6, 16
 Kathāvatthu, 16
 Kathāvatthupparakāra-aṭṭhakathā, 15
 Kathopaniṣad, 72
 Kaukūlikas, 15, 16, 55
 Kaundinya, 70
 Kauśāmbī, 62
 Kavi
 Attha, 24
 Cintā, 24
 Sutta, 24
 Kavīndravacanasaṃuccaya, 3, 10
 Kākandī, 62
 Kāla, 3
 Kālakavana, 12
 Kālidāsa, 10, 19, 20, 21, 23, 36, 42, 44, 48
 Kāmarūpa, 6
 Kāmasāstra, 21, 27
 Kāṇva, 18
 Kāśī-sundarī, 18
 Kāśyapa, 37, 70
 Kāśyapīya, 16
 Kātyāyana, 70
 Kāveyā, 25
 Kāvya-dharma, 21
 Keith, A. B., 1, 4, 8, 26, 34, 39
 Kern, 1
 Kielhorn, 1
 Kimura, R., 1
 Komudhagandha, 34
 Kośala, 61
 Kṛṣṇavāsudeva, 60, 65, 66, 72, 83
 Kumārajīva, 4
 Kumāralabdha, 4
 Kumārasaṃbhava, 23, 26, 48
 Kuntī, 18
 Kurus, 79
 Kuvera, 62, 79

 Lakṣmaṇa, 64, 65
 Lalitavistara, 17, 27, 28, 29, 30, 37, 38
 Law, B. C., 15, 26, 47, 57

 Le Museon, 1
 Leumann, 1
 Levi, Sylvain, 1
 Lokur, 2, 26
 Lüders, 1, 8

 Madhyadeśa, 12, 61
 Magadhavati, 34
 Mahābhārata, 14, 17, 20, 42
 Mahāniddeśa, 53
 Mahāprajñāpāramitāśāstra, 4
 Mahāsaṅghikas, 15, 56
 Mahāśūtrālaṅkāraśāstra, 4, 6
 Mahāvamsa, 13
 Mahāvastu, 17, 28, 30, 37, 38, 56
 Mahāvīra, 24, 65
 Mahāvīryūtpatti, 15, 40, 55
 Mahāyāna-bhūmiguhyavācāmūlaśāstra, 2
 Mahāyāna-saddhotpāda śāstra, 2, 6, 33
 Mahīśāsaka, 7, 16
 Mekhala-dandakas, 37
 Malalasekera, G. F., 14, 15
 Māndhātṛ, 18
 Maṇḍipamahākārunikadevapañcastotra, 3
 Manorathapūraṇī, 61
 Mantharā, 64
 Manusamhitā, 12
 Matricitra, 3
 Maudgalyāyana, 33, 70
 Mādhyamikakārikā, 72
 Mādri, 18
 Māhismati, 77
 Mākandī, 62
 Mālava, 5, 7
 Mālinī, 39
 Mānini, 82
 Māra, 57, 83
 Māthara, 5
 Mātṛceṭa, 8
 Māyā, 63, 64, 78, 79
 McCrindle, 14
 Menakā, 18, 36, 47
 Milinda-Paṇḍita, 7, 13, 16, 70
 Mitra, R. L., 9
 Moggaliputta Tissa, 12
 Moksadharma, 17
 Mr̥cchakaṭikā, 34

 Nahuṣa, 79
 Namuci, 84
 Nanda, 32, 35, 46, 69, 81, 82
 Nandanavana, 82
 Nandargikar, 2, 26
 Nanjio, Bunyiu, 2
 Nābhaga, 18
 Nāgānanda, 34
 Nāgārjuna, 4, 5, 8, 22, 54
 Nāḷaka-sutta, 37
 Nāṭyaśāstra, 23
 Niddesa, 83
 Nikāya
 Aṅguttara, 25, 54, 86
 Dīgha, 61, 76, 86
 Majjhima, 53, 54
 Saṃyutta, 86
 Nirodha, 84
 Nirukta, 17
 Nirvāṇa, 5, 7, 57, 68, 83
 Nirveda, 84

Noble Eightfold Path, 57
Noble Truths, Four, 56
Nyāya, 17

Odiviśa, 6
Oldenberg, 39

Pañcagatidipana, 10
Pañcarātra, 9
Papañcasūdanī, 68
Paramārtha, 2
Paramārthabodhicittabhāvanākrama-
varṇasaṅgraha, 3
Paramatthajotikā, 62, 70
Parāśara, 17, 18, 70
Patañjali, 8, 10, 12
Pāṇḍu, 18
Pāṇini, 22, 40, 68
Pāramitā, 8
Pārijāta, 82
Pāripātra, 12, 78
Pārśva, 4, 5, 13
Pāṭaliputra, 5, 8
Pātimokkha, 76
Pitṛceta, 3
Poussin, La Vallée, 1, 33
Prajñā, 85
Pratijñāyauḡandharāyaṇa, 9, 23
Pratīpa, 18
Pratītyasamutpāda, 57
Prayāga, 12
Pṛthu, 18
Przyluski, 16
Punarvasu, 80
Punyaśāśa, 4, 5, 6
Puraṇḍara, 19
Pūrṇaka, 70
Pūrṇa Śonāparānta, 70
Puru, 83
Puruṣottama, 60
Puspitāgrā, 39
Puṣya, 16

Raghu, 83
Raghuvamśa, 48, 49, 50
Rakkhitātala, 7
Ratnāvali, 54
Rājadharmā, 42, 63
Rājagṛha, 20, 56
Rāma, 61, 64
Rāma Dāśarathī, 60
Rāmāyaṇa, 20, 42, 46
Rāṣṭrapāla, 70
Rāvaṇa, 65
Rgveda, 17, 18, 23
Rhys Davids, Mrs., 43
Rohiṇi, 17
Riśyaśṛṅga, 36, 70
Rudradāman I, 1, 39, 40
Rudrarāma, 57

Śaci, 63, 78
Saddhammopāyaṇa, 60
Samādhi, 74, 85
Saṃghaguhya, 6
Samsāra, 84
Saṃskāras, 84
Saṃyuktaratnāpiṭakasūtra, 5
Sang-ying, 4

Saṅkheyya Pariveṇa, 7
Śarabhaṅga, 47
Śaraṇāgati, 67, 69
Śarvāstivāda, 6, 13, 56
Śāstri, Haraprasād, 1, 26, 31, 32
Śatapañcaśatanāmastotra, 3
Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, 42
Satyayātu, 17
Saundarananda-kāvya, 1, 17, 20, 25
Śāketa, 6, 12, 19
Śākyamunicarita, 17
Śākyas, 61, 62, 69, 77
Sāṃkhya, 17, 42, 72
Śāntā, 36
Śāntanu, 18
Śāradvatīputra, 11
Śārdūlavikṛīḍita, 39
Śāriputra, 33, 67
Śāriputraprakaraṇa, 3, 5, 11, 23, 26, 33,
76, 77
Schmidt, 2, 26
Schrader, 1
Sen, Sukumar, 2
Siddhārtha, 19, 66, 73, 79
Śikharinī, 39
Sila, 74, 75
Sītā, 20, 61, 65
Si-yu-ki, 3
Smith, V. A., 14
Smṛti, 85
Sovani, 2
Speyer, 1
Śraddhā, 57, 75
Śraddhotpādaśāstra, 1, 4
Śrāvastī, 5, 62
Strauss, 1
Subhāṣitāvali, 49
Sudarsāna, 16
Śuddhodana, 20, 27, 28, 63, 64, 80, 82
Sukhāvatīvyyūha, 3
Śukra, 21
Sumaṅgalavilāsini, 61, 68
Sundarī, 6, 81, 82
Śūnyatā, 22
Sūtrālaṅkāra, 1, 2, 6, 33
Suttee, 7, 14
Suvaḡanā, 39
Suvarṇākṣi, 6, 12
Suzuki, 1, 16, 85
Śvetāśvatara-upaniṣad, 41
Tathāgata, 4
Tārānātha, 3, 7
Thaneswar, 12
Therīgāthā, 52
Thomas, E. J., 57
Thomas, F. W., 1, 3
Thūna, 12
Tili, 5
Tirahuti, 6
Tiśya, 70
Tittakaro, 23
Uḡāyin, 21, 79

Upajāti, 39
 Upāli, 70
 Ūrmilā, 65
 Urvaśi, 37
 Ūśanas, 21
 Usāragiri, 12
 Uttaramegha, 49
 Uttaramimāṃsā, 21
 Uttarāpatha, 15

 Vaihāra hill, 56
 Vaiśeṣika, 17
 Vaitāliya, 39
 Vaiśvasvata, 36, 79
 Vajrasūci, 3, 9
 Vajrayānamūlapattisaṃgraha, 3
 Vāṅṛsa, 24, 46
 Vasantatilakā, 39
 Vaśiṣṭha, 17, 37, 70
 Vasumitra, 5, 13, 15, 56
 Vattaniya monastery, 7, 13
 Vatthugāthā, 39

Vālmiki, 18, 19, 24, 47, 61, 63, 66, 69
 Vibhāṇḍaka, 18
 Vicitravīrya, 18
 Vinaya Pitaka, 6, 56, 73
 Vīrya, 75, 85, 86
 Visuddhimagga, 75
 Viśvāki, 18
 Viśvāmitra, 18, 47
 Vṛddhaparāśara, 19
 Vyāsa, 18

Wassiljew, 1, 5
 Weller, 1, 27
 Windisch, 1
 Winternitz, 1, 4, 9
 Wohlgemuth, 2

Yayāti, 18
 Yamaka, 45
 Yaśodharā, 20, 65, 81, 82
 Yoga, 17, 42, 86

